



AN ORAL HISTORY OF

KENNETH C. CRAWFORD
COLONEL (RETIRED)
UNITED STATES ARMY 1941 – 1970



Interviewed by:
Major Robert J. Abbott
Major Alexander N. Pickands

November 2008

The Judge Advocate General's Legal Center & School
United States Army
Charlottesville, Virginia

This oral history was completed in partial satisfaction of the Master of Laws requirements of the 57th Judge Advocate Officer Graduate Course. The recordings and transcripts of this oral history are the property of the United States Government. Requests for permission to reprint should be directed to the Senior Librarian, The Judge Advocate General's Legal Center and School, United States Army, 600 Massie Road, Charlottesville, Virginia 22903.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

I. Executive Summary	ii
II. Interview Transcript.....	1
A. Background.....	2
1. Family and Childhood in Illinois	2
2. Overcoming The Depression, Bullies, and Grade School	23
3. Playing Baseball and Delivering Newspapers	43
4. Boxing at Broverman’s Gym, Continuing a Love Affair with Baseball	56
5. Working in the Coal Mine	84
6. Tryouts with the St. Louis Cardinals & Cincinnati Reds systems	94
7. Trading Baseball for College	104
B. Army Service	123
1. Initial Entry Training and Fort Bragg	123
2. OCS, Commissioning in the Field Artillery, and Initial Assignments	125
3. Louisiana Maneuver Area.....	132
4. World War II.....	137
5. After the War: Finishing School and Receiving a Regular Army Appointment	161
6. Selection to the JAGC and UVA Law School	170
7. Fort Meade, Deputy SJA of Second Army	192
8. Germany, SJA for 4th Infantry Division.....	210
9. Korea, SJA for the Korean Military Advisory Group & 8th U.S. Army	217
10. Fort McPherson, SJA for Third Army	218
11. Commandant, The Judge Advocate General’s School	223
12. Looking Back.....	233
C. Beyond Retirement: Service After the Army.....	248
1. Faculty, Southwestern Legal Foundation	253
2. Director of Education for the Federal Judicial Center	255
D. Final Thoughts for Leaders and Judge Advocates	273
III. Appendix A: Photographs.....	A-1
IV. Appendix B: Biographical Sketch of Interviewers	B-1
Index	I-1

ORAL HISTORY PROGRAM
COLONEL KENNETH C. CRAWFORD, U.S. ARMY (RETIRED)

Executive Summary

Many aspire to master a field of their chosen career, while some aim for proficiency in several areas. Of those who seek greatness, few obtain it; for those whose sights are set upon fame or notoriety find themselves unable to focus upon the real world. The truly great among us are marked as much by their humility as their strength, their grace as much as their mastery. Colonel Kenneth C. Crawford possesses each of those qualities, and more.

A talented and versatile athlete, Ken Crawford's immense physical prowess yielded opportunities to embark upon two different professional sports careers, one in boxing and another in baseball. Instead, he chose a life of humble service over a life of fame. After answering the nation's call during its darkest hours in World War II, he served as a Soldier, a field artillery officer, and as a judge advocate during a career that spanned three decades. Excelling at every task to which he laid his hand, Colonel Crawford served in the forefront of the Judge Advocate General's Corps during its most rapidly-changing years, as it transformed from a skeletal advisory staff structure to a fully realized, professional corps of lawyers and paralegals.

Although he would later call Taylorville his home town, Colonel Crawford was born in Nokomis, Illinois, on October 31, 1918. Nokomis is best known as the home of baseball Hall of Famer "Sunny Jim" Bottomley, who, it turns out, was a childhood friend of Colonel Crawford's father, Chuck. Chuck Crawford was a foreman in the local coal mine, a "face boss" who was responsible for day-to-day operations seven days a week. Colonel Crawford's earliest memories include his father constantly inspecting the mine, vigilant for anything that might threaten his men. His father's example taught him his first two, and most lasting, leadership lessons: take care of the people in your charge, and spare no effort when working as part of a team.

Although his father was certainly a strong influence in his life, Colonel Crawford can trace much of his wisdom and mercy to his mother. Raising a family of four children during the Depression would cause most people to look only to their own; she, however, spared food from her garden to feed homeless men who would stop by their house looking for work. Possessing a strong sense of responsibility early in life, Ken Crawford learned to look out for his younger siblings, including his brother Jimmy and sisters Joan and Ruth.

While walking a girl to grade school in Kincaid, Illinois, young Ken had an encounter that would be the first of many to shape his character and discipline in a way that would serve him well later in life. A local bully fancied himself the boyfriend of the young lady Ken was escorting, and seeing Ken carrying her books was too much for him. It would not be the last time Ken was threatened by bullies; after all, times were tough, and rural Illinois

ruffians could be just as tough. It did spark something within him, however, something that would stay with him throughout his life: a strong sense of justice, which, to Colonel Crawford, meant not only that villains must be vanquished and wrongs must be punished, but that those in need should receive succor and those who had been led astray should be led home.

It should be no surprise, then, that as Ken Crawford became a young man he also began a love affair with the sport of boxing. At fifteen years old, he decided that settling affairs with his tormentors by way of a street fight was dangerous as well as illegal. It would also be ungentlemanly for a youth who had already become a leader in his school and in the community. Spending long nights at Broverman's Gym, Ken became, in his words, "a worthy opponent in the art of fisticuffs" in the Golden Gloves competition program. Along the way, he extended a courteous "invitation" to those who believed that strength had earned them the right to abuse others. Those who accepted his challenge left changed, if not in mind, at least in body.

Ken became an immensely successful and popular boxer who enjoyed an almost undefeated record throughout high school, college, and finally as a Soldier at Fort Bragg seven years later. One of his final bouts was for the championship of an Army tournament officiated by none other than the "Manassa Mauler," Jack Dempsey himself. Although he ultimately chose not to remain a career boxer, Colonel Crawford would later say that "win or lose, I learned confidence and self reliance. Now, I'm not afraid to take on something new, because I feel I can learn whatever is required."

Boxing was not Ken's only serious foray into sports as a young man. Having a father who played baseball as a boy with a future legend and Hall of Famer meant that Ken was bound to play a game or two. However, Ken experienced an arm injury that convinced him to refocus on his earlier dream to attend college.

In 1938, Ken began studying economics at Illinois College while continuing to box in weekly tournaments and holding down several jobs to make ends meet. This ambitious schedule was not enough to keep him from socializing with the girls at the nearby MacMurray College, however. It was there that Ken met the love of his life, Madge. He brought to bear all of the charm and perseverance gained in his early life to make her his bride.

Although his world was certainly looking up, the outside world was changing for the worse. The Depression yielded to an even greater evil, as World War II made the future seem dark and uncertain. In 1941, one year before Ken would have completed his degree, he received a draft notice sending him to Fort Bragg for initial entry training. It was during this tour that Ken fought to the final bout of the tournament officiated by Jack Dempsey.

Always seeking new challenges and opportunities, Ken did not stay put for long. He quickly completed Officer Candidate School and became a field artillery officer. Although he was disappointed with his first assignment, a "paperwork job" instead of "shooting the cannon," he developed a valuable practice that he followed throughout the rest of his career. Arriving to the job with no training and little understanding of what it entailed, he quickly

identified the “experts” in the office and followed their lead. Empowering the informal leaders under his charge quickly distinguished then-Lieutenant Crawford from his peers, earning him a quick promotion and a reputation for confidence and competence that would continue to grow as the war frequently placed him in positions that required him to take charge, to improvise, and to use every resource at his disposal.

As it was for thousands of households across the nation, World War II proved to be costly to the Crawford family. On February 7, 1943, then-Major Crawford lost his brother, Jim, as the result of Jim’s bomber crashing in New Guinea. Involved in some of the heaviest fighting in the war, Major Crawford was not afforded time to grieve, and he continued to press on until the war ended in 1945.

When he returned from the war, Major Crawford set aside his military career to finish what he had started – a college degree. As he signed out, a young sergeant asked him if he would sign an application for a Regular Army appointment. Thinking he had nothing to lose, Major Crawford signed the paper, returned to school, and thought nothing of it. Signing that paper turned out to be a “life-changing proposition,” as he describes it. After completing his bachelor’s degree and entering Washington University Law School, Ken received a telegram informing him that his application had been approved. Deciding that the Army offered him the opportunity to serve others as he had become accustomed, Ken returned to the Army as a major.

Major Crawford enjoyed several tours thereafter, including Fort Lewis, Washington, the Philippines, and Japan. His thirst for education returned, however, and he applied for the opportunity to go to law school and enter the Judge Advocate General’s Corps (JAGC). He was an easy choice for the Judge Advocate General at the time, Major General Ted Decker, having demonstrated a talent for leadership during the war and having already been accepted into a law program at Washington University. Good news was followed by even better news, as the Crawfords had their only child, Jim, in the days and weeks before law school began. Major Crawford attended law school at the University of Virginia; he and Madge thoroughly enjoyed the Charlottesville community. They were destined to return years later.

Major Crawford missed few marks at school, graduating Order of the Coif near the top of his class. On the day he graduated from UVA, Major Crawford was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel. Colonel Crawford was certainly a big fish in the small pond that was the JAGC, and he was soon assigned to Fort Meade, Maryland, as the Deputy Staff Judge Advocate (DSJA) for the Headquarters, Second United States Army. At that time, there was no formal training for judge advocates entering the Army, and once again LTC Crawford was called upon to learn and excel by his own devices. Perhaps this experience impressed upon him the desire to teach, a role that characterized the final years of his career and service after the Army.

During his tour at Fort Meade, he encountered a JAGC leader who would do as much to shape his leadership style and emphasis on training as any other experience in his adult life. Colonel Edward Hamilton “Ham” Young became Lieutenant Colonel Crawford’s Staff Judge Advocate (SJA) after having served as the Commandant of the Judge Advocate General’s School at the University of Michigan. In his role as Colonel Young’s deputy, he learned

another valuable lesson about leadership: Any good leader is a good follower first; a self-starter whose initiative and discipline anticipates challenges and solves them without requiring constant guidance. In his words, he “learned early on that you don’t bother the boss and don’t ask him how to do things. . . . You just don’t ask the boss. You find out . . . what to do and take all the work off his back that you can.” The boss, as it turns out, has both a boss and work of his own.

Before his next assignment, Lieutenant Colonel Crawford attended the War College alongside soldiers like Major General George S. Prugh, Lieutenant General Harold G. “Hal” Moore, and General Sam S. Walker. His next assignment would take him back to Germany, this time as the SJA for the 4th Infantry Division. It was here that Colonel Crawford would demonstrate his caring but tough leadership and mentorship philosophy. Now that the war was over, soldiers in Germany were often travelling throughout Europe without permission, enjoying what the continent had to offer. This lack of accountability compromised the Army’s ability to function and train, and the problem was not limited to the line units. Colonel Crawford’s own officers would occasionally sneak off during their non-duty time and travel to exotic destinations like Paris or Italy.

Colonel Crawford discovered that one young lieutenant had taken just such a trip when he went to check in on the lieutenant at the hospital where he had undergone a minor surgery. Knowing the officer was an otherwise fine judge advocate who had simply made a foolish decision, Colonel Crawford decided to risk the displeasure of his commanding general by developing the officer rather than to court-martial him. That young lieutenant, a man named Bill Dwyer, became a federal judge years later, taking the lessons of wisdom and patience with him to the bench.

Colonel Crawford would serve as a SJA twice more, once in Korea, for the Korean Military Advisory Group (KMAG), and later Eighth U.S. Army, then at Fort McPherson, Georgia, for Third United States Army. At the latter posting, Colonel Crawford worked for a tough, but likeable, Lieutenant General Louis W. Truman. One day, General Truman demanded that Colonel Crawford coordinate a Law Day celebration to top them all; for a speaker, he wanted none other than a Justice of the United States Supreme Court, and he wanted world-class entertainment for the attendees. No Supreme Court Justices were available. Colonel Crawford had an excellent eye for talent by this time, having spent his career identifying and employing the informal leaders and subject-matter experts in his offices for years. He chose a relatively unknown, new judge named Griffin Bell to deliver the address. He chose his own wife Madge to sing for the evening’s entertainment. He chose well. Griffin Bell, who would later become Attorney General, gave a rousing speech in support of the Supreme Court’s vigorous stance on racial equality. Madge sang like an angel, turning in a stunning performance that left the crowd wanting more. President Lyndon Johnson called General Truman to congratulate him on the evening’s performances.

Colonel Crawford left Georgia for his final tour in the JAGC, one in which he brought to bear all of his scholarship, leadership, and wisdom. Serving as the Commandant of the Judge Advocate General’s School until his retirement in 1970, Colonel Crawford was a force for constant growth and improvement. Applying his “power-down” leadership, Colonel Crawford encouraged innovation and improvement in the school’s academics. He focused

his attention on getting to know students personally and making sure that they left the school “better qualified, more able to serve [their] country and the Judge Advocate General’s Corps” than when they entered.

Being Commandant of the JAG School during Vietnam brought its own challenges. Students at UVA, stirred up by anti-war sentiment and encouraged by misguided leadership and faculty, once threatened an attack on the JAG School. Disappointed with the university’s failure of leadership, and long-since accustomed to dealing with bullies, COL Crawford decided to meet the angry crowd in front of the school with a line of his own students. Facing the steely-eyed gaze of a combat-hardened warrior and former Golden Gloves boxer was too much for them. These students learned a new lesson that day: actions take more commitment than words, and civility is often less painful than lawlessness.

In 1970, Colonel Crawford ended his distinguished career as his son began his own. One of Colonel Crawford’s last memories of his time in uniform is pinning the lieutenant’s bars on his son’s jacket as he graduated from The Citadel and earned his own commission. Colonel Crawford thus passed the legacy of his character, discipline, and desire to serve to another future colonel, Colonel Jim Crawford.

Hardly one to be idle in retirement, Colonel Crawford briefly served as faculty at Southwestern Legal Foundation at Southern Methodist University before being chosen for a newly created position at the Federal Judicial Center, the Director of Education. Colonel Crawford spent another full career with the Judicial Center, training federal judges across the country. He also worked with the Asia Foundation, a non-profit, non-governmental organization committed to improving governance, law, and civil society within the Asian-Pacific region. Unable to give up his lifelong passion of helping others, Colonel Crawford has often found time to practice law on his own, and he still provides pro bono legal guidance and assistance to members of his retirement community.

Although it would be accurate to say that Colonel Kenneth C. Crawford achieved greatness, it would not be true simply by virtue of his membership in the Greatest Generation. He is one of our Army’s truly exceptional leaders, having served sacrificially and with great perseverance, wisdom, patience, and humility during the most tumultuous and transformational time in our nation and Corps. By reading the pages that follow, Soldiers, leaders, judge advocates, and paralegals can benefit from the leadership lessons gathered over a lifetime: work hard and with the awareness that you are part of a team, learn your trade, and take care of others, whether they are under your charge or you are under theirs.

MAJ Robert J. Abbott
MAJ Alexander N. Pickands

18 April 2009

1 **Oral History of Colonel (Retired) Kenneth C. Crawford**

2

3 Q. Good morning, sir, my name is Captain Rob Abbott,
4 and with my partner, Major Alex Pickands, we are conducting an
5 oral history interview of Colonel Kenneth Crawford. We're
6 honored to be here with you today. It's Friday morning,
7 approximately 0940 on the 7th of November, 2008. This
8 interview is being conducted in the Regimental Reading Room of
9 the Judge Advocate General's Legal Center and School in
10 Charlottesville, Virginia.

11 On behalf of myself, Major Pickands, and the entire Oral
12 History Program, welcome. We'd like to thank you for coming
13 here today and participating in this project. We also want to
14 thank you for your service to this country and let you know
15 how excited we are to have this opportunity to sit with you
16 and record your oral history.

17 I'd like to begin, sir, with asking you some questions
18 about your background, your childhood, and your life prior to
19 the military. Then we'll get into your education, military
20 history, and life after the military as well. How's that
21 sound, sir?

22 A. Very good.

23 Q. Let's begin with your background first. Where were
24 you born?

1 A. I was born October 31, 1918, in Nokomis, Illinois.
2 That's a small town of about 2000 people in the center of the
3 state. As you enter the town, you'll see a big sign that
4 reads, "Nokomis, Home of Sunny Jim Bottomley". It was there
5 ages ago, and I understand it still is. Bottomley, who had a
6 little influence on my life, grew up with my father and they
7 played a lot of baseball together. It turned out that Jim
8 Bottomley was a natural. My father wasn't, but he wanted me
9 to be when I came along.

10 Jim Bottomley was a gifted baseball player. He played
11 first base for the Cardinals for many years. He's in the Hall
12 of Fame, and was a magnificent hitter. He finished his
13 baseball career as manager of the St. Louis Browns. Again, my
14 dad would've given anything if he could have duplicated what
15 Sunny Jim accomplished.

16 Q. Yes, sir.

17 A. Failing in that, he seemed determined that I was
18 going to be the one to do what he couldn't. In some cases
19 that can work out fine; for instance, Mickey Mantle and Bob
20 Feller. I think it's a mistake to do this, at least it was in
21 my case. I will try to remember as much as I can of my early
22 years. My memory begins at about age 4.

23 Q. Tell me about those early memories, sir.

1 A. I recall that I'd been given a beautiful green
2 marble, extra large, and it was my shooter. You fellows have
3 played marbles, I'm sure. One day in the front yard I dropped
4 this thing near the sidewalk. It was green-colored as was the
5 grass, and it was thick. I remember searching for hours to no
6 avail: I patted the grass, walked over every inch in my bare
7 feet in an attempt to feel it. I even shed some tears about
8 it. My mother saw me doing that and reminded me that big boys
9 didn't cry. That's where my memory begins.

10 The next thing I recall was my mother putting a harness
11 on me and my little brother, Jimmy. He was about 2 years
12 younger, wonderful little redhead, lots of freckles. She
13 attached the harness to a clothesline, and we were on our own.
14 Of course the tether limited our freedom. One evening my
15 father came home from work early from his job in the coal
16 mine, saw his two sons were tied up, and just threw a fit.
17 I'll never forget him protesting loudly that he didn't want
18 his kids treated like animals. My mother's temper matched
19 his, she stood her ground, and the fight was on. No blows
20 were struck, but I remember being scared by this, somewhat
21 frightened. I noticed that my little brother, Jimmy, who was
22 about 19 months younger, was crying and obviously scared. At
23 that point a thought went through my mind, I'm the eldest and
24 it's my job to protect him. Strangely enough, that feeling

1 never left me. When he died on February 7, 1943, it was the
2 worst day of my life. He was killed in a bomber crash in New
3 Guinea. He had an enviable record as a real war hero. I was
4 so proud of him; I loved him with all my heart. Still do.

5 My family consisted of Mother and Dad, and four children.
6 Again, I was the eldest. I was born in Nokomis, Illinois;
7 moved to Hillsboro, a few miles away, where Jimmy came into
8 this world. In 1926, we were living in the little town of
9 Edinburg, Illinois, not far from Hillsboro, where my sister
10 Ruth was born. A few years later in '31, our last sibling
11 arrived, that was my baby sister, Joan. My parents were
12 married at a very early age. My mother was 19. They tried as
13 a matter of fact to get married when they were both underage,
14 but that didn't work, so they had to get officially married
15 later.

16 My mother was one of five daughters of Tony and Emma
17 Gates. They lived on a small farm with their six children
18 near Coffeen, Illinois; five girls, one boy. I'll never
19 understand how they managed to survive. Grandma and Grandpa
20 Gates were the sweetest couple you could imagine, but their
21 income was practically nil. They had an exceedingly difficult
22 time. Tony, my grandfather, was taciturn. My grandmother,
23 Emma, was the epitome of a loving, kind, and compassionate
24 grandmother. They lived on this small farm in Illinois. I

1 loved to go there. It was always a grand experience. In the
2 back of their small home was a one-holer outhouse. We were
3 cautioned to look for snakes before we entered. The snakes, I
4 think, were mostly harmless. They'd hide themselves up in the
5 roof of this outhouse, and when someone was there, a black
6 snake would peer down at the occupant. One didn't waste much
7 time in there. You didn't linger in the outhouse. Maybe
8 that's why Tony wasn't in too big a hurry to get rid of that
9 snake.

10 Not far behind that outhouse was a wooded area where a
11 stream meandered. Some of my older cousins had managed to dam
12 this stream at a strategic spot and formed quite a pool. It
13 was deep enough and wide enough to swim in it with ease. We
14 weren't supposed to do that because it blocked the water from
15 getting down to where it should go.

16 Q. What happened to the dam, sir?

17 A. The older boys—and I helped out—would rebuild the
18 dam when necessary. If we were accused of wrongdoing, we
19 would deny guilt: we claimed we would never do such a thing.
20 We blamed it on the beavers. Beavers were around there in
21 abundance. To blame them made sense. No one believed us, but
22 it was Tony's land and he didn't make an issue of it. We were
23 still using that man-made, or boy-made, pool when I went off
24 to the Army in 1941.

1 As I said previously, my mother's family consisted of
2 five girls and one boy. The boy's name, again, was William,
3 but he was never, to my knowledge, been called anything but
4 Willie. My mother's sisters were Ruby, Cora, Lula, and last
5 of all, Gladys, who was the youngest. She lived to be 97.
6 All five of these girls were very attractive. I would be
7 surprised if they weren't regarded as very good-looking
8 anytime and anywhere.

9 Q. That sounds like a good trait to have, sir.

10 A. Yes. Not too bad. It'll get you through the door,
11 anyway.

12 Q. I'd imagine so, sir.

13 A. Ruby had married a fellow named Louis Isslehardt.
14 They had two children. The first one was Ralph, who was my
15 hero. He was 11 years older than I. I admired him so very
16 much, and I've got a lot to say about him—or will have as we
17 go along. He went to Franklin College in Indiana, and did
18 fine in his studies. He excelled in football. He got some
19 sort of All-American honors when he graduated from Franklin,
20 and then he went on to the Detroit Lions where he played for a
21 few years. Eventually, he became one of the top executives in
22 the City Services Oil Company. He was one wonderful man. He
23 retired from the company at age 62 and died of a heart attack
24 shortly thereafter, I'm sorry to say.

1 One weekend we gathered at the farm, which was customary.
2 It wasn't too far to go for any of us. These fine sisters
3 would try to get the family together whenever possible. Every
4 now and then we'd gather just outside Coffeen, which was a
5 town of only 500 people. While we were there at Tony's farm,
6 Ralph drove up in a new Ford automobile.

7 Q. What model was the Ford?

8 A. A Model T. All the aunts and cousins gathered
9 around Ralph. You can imagine the fluttering around and the
10 excitement. He was one handsome dude. Soon they ushered him
11 indoors. Jimmy and I remained outside admiring the new car.
12 Jimmy said, "Kenny, do you think you could drive her?" And I
13 said, "Expect so, Jimmy." I'd seen my dad and others drive.
14 I felt that there's not too much to it; I should be able to do
15 it. Besides, he thought I could do anything and I wanted to
16 keep it that way. So I told him, "Climb on in."

17 Q. About how old were you at that time, sir?

18 A. I was 7 and he was 5 at this time. I got the engine
19 started, working with the magneto and, of course, I had to
20 turn the crank. I manipulated the gears some way and the
21 thing began to move. I pointed it toward the road and we were
22 on our way.

23 Q. So, you took your first joyride at 7 years old?

1 A. Seven years old. Yeah, that was the first and that
2 was the last for a long time. I realized shortly after we got
3 on the road that I didn't know how to stop this thing. Jimmy
4 had been looking back, he'd heard some noise and said, "Kenny,
5 can you hear all that hollering?" I said, "No. What's going
6 on?" He then said, "Well, everybody's coming out the front
7 door, and they're jumping around and they're waving," and,
8 "Maybe you'd better stop, Kenny." I replied, "I don't know
9 how, Jimmy, but maybe we'll run out of gas." He said, "Well,
10 Ralph is running after us and he looks kind of mad."

11 I don't know how fast we were going, but I'd estimate it
12 at about 15 miles an hour. Seemed faster than that. Ralph
13 caught up to us, jumped on the running board, and said,
14 "Kenny, move over and let me drive." Of course I was only too
15 glad to do so. He didn't seem to be mad at me; which was a
16 great relief. He stopped the car, turned it around, and
17 explained to me how to do it. He said, "Well, if you drive
18 again, this is what you have to do," and I'm thinking, "I
19 don't think I'll ever drive again." Ralph endeared himself to
20 me from that time forward. I never forgot it. It shows you
21 how important those little things are.

22 Jimmy was clutching at my arm, and said, "We gonna get a
23 whippin'?" And I said, "Not you, Jimmy. You ain't done
24 nothin'." That was a great relief to him, but I could see

1 judgment was going to descend on me. I had to admit that it
2 was justified. My dad wasn't there, fortunately, or I
3 would've had my bottom spanked. My mother never hesitated to
4 swat us for wrongdoing, so I thought I'd have to pay for my
5 sins, but nothing happened. Everyone seemed so relieved that
6 we weren't injured. The smaller children seemed to respect my
7 derring-do, courage and ability, and I loved the short time I
8 that was kind of a minor hero.

9 I recall one day when Jimmy and I were at the farm. We
10 had been left there while our parents went back home or went
11 on a trip. It was October. The melons were ripe. Grandpa
12 Gates had a lease on an acre of land and he had planted melons
13 on it. They really were there in abundance. They were ripe,
14 but he wasn't doing a thing about selling them. We decided
15 that we'd take the situation in our own hands. They were so
16 heavy, though, it took both of us to lift one of them, but we
17 gathered a few. Then we set up what we called our little
18 store. We found a couple of barrels, and we rolled those out
19 and put a board across them. Then we placed the melons on the
20 board for display. We had quite a pile of them. We worked
21 like beavers on the display. Then we had to get the customers
22 in. I had Jimmy go down to the road—cute little guy,
23 redheaded, freckles, and so on—he'd wave at everybody and
24 signal them to come over. Very few cars stopped, but Jimmy

1 kept trying. Our customers would argue with us about the
2 price. Our price was 25 cents, but we'd take anything we
3 could get; we had so much to sell. As the day began to fade,
4 we'd have to lower our price. I remember selling some of
5 those beautiful melons for 5 cents apiece. I was disgusted
6 with the American public for treating us that way; skinflints!
7 That evening I told Grandpa Gates what we'd done. I thought
8 he would express approval and appreciation, but he didn't. I
9 had a pocketful of coins that I handed over to him and
10 thought, again, that he would appreciate it. But he was the
11 strong, silent type and he took it without a comment, and that
12 was that.

13 We went back to our task the next day, and as long as we
14 were there, we'd try to sell those melons. It was a good
15 learning experience.

16 Q. Sounds like you were a young entrepreneur?

17 A. That's right, Rob. I began to learn a little about
18 people, also.

19 Q. Yes, sir.

20 A. Another thing comes to mind about that farm. Most
21 farms in that part of Illinois have a root cellar. I don't
22 know if you're familiar with this, but at a strategic spot in
23 the yard they'd dig a cellar. This one, like every other one
24 I've been into, was dark, cool, and damp, but it would furnish

1 some refrigeration. Things didn't spoil as much as they would
2 have otherwise. Another reason, I think, for building these
3 was for protection. Tornadoes were not infrequent in that
4 part of Illinois, and they commanded a lot of respect.
5 Whenever a storm would arrive, a decision had to be made
6 whether to stay inside or go to the root cellar.

7 Q. Why did they call it a "root cellar"?

8 A. Because of the things like beets that would go in
9 there, carrots, for example. The food that comes from the
10 ground that you pull up—that's mostly what's in a root
11 cellar.

12 Q. That explains it, sir.

13 A. I don't know whether they still have those. I'm
14 sure, in the Midwest on most farms, they still have some sort
15 of protection from storms. Whenever the sky would blacken,
16 and maybe you'd see a funnel or even before that, you had to
17 make a decision whether to go to the root cellar or not;
18 because once it arrived, it was too late to change your mind.
19 My grandmother, Emma, was not a small woman. She always
20 dressed in long dresses, down to her ankles. At a sign of
21 trouble, she would round up all the kids. She'd call them all
22 together, and then lead the way to the root cellar. She'd
23 always wear these ankle-length skirts and a bonnet, and the
24 little ones would gather around her and hold on to her. It

1 always reminded me of a mother hen and her chicks going
2 somewhere safe. Since I was the eldest, or close to it, of
3 the group that was there, I was assigned the task of closing
4 the double doors to the cellar. We'd get in and then these
5 doors were closed. There was a makeshift locking device. It
6 didn't work very well, because you still had to hold the doors
7 down as the storm raged. That was my job. I'd remain on the
8 steps, look back at the kids, and show them my determination
9 to protect them. I pictured myself as Horatius at the
10 Sublican Bridge.

11 Again, all four of the Crawford children were born in
12 different little towns around the county seat of Christian
13 County, Taylorville. Edinburg was the one where the third
14 child, Ruth, the eldest of my two sisters was born. It was a
15 very nice little town.

16 Our backyard was adjacent to a large garden which was
17 maintained by our neighbors, an elderly couple named Mr. and
18 Mrs. Gray—very nice, very lovely people. There was an
19 extremely large gourd which was on Mr. Gray's vine, but the
20 gourd was in our yard, on our side of the fence. Jimmy and I
21 debated long and hard. We talked it over. I think that was
22 my first brush with anything of a legal nature. To whom did
23 that gourd belong? It was on our property. I know it was
24 attached to his vine and that's where it got its subsistence,

1 but we decided (maybe I decreed) that since it was on our
2 property it belonged to our family. So, we cut it off. I
3 told my mother I knew it was the wrong thing to do. She told
4 me to march right over to Mr. Gray and tell him what I had
5 done. It took all the courage I had to admit my guilt. Jimmy
6 tagged along with me. I told him that he wasn't guilty. I
7 had sinned. We went over to Gray's place, and I rang his
8 doorbell. He came to the door, and I confessed to what had
9 happened. He didn't say anything, but followed me out to the
10 scene of the crime. That was just terrible. There lay that
11 detached gourd. I noted a tear in his eye as he looked at
12 this thing, which was a prize melon. He shook his head and
13 said, "I'd planned to show it at the county fair," and walked
14 off.

15 You can imagine how I felt, but it was a valuable lesson.
16 I was depressed for at least a week. I never told Jimmy of my
17 remorse. He soon forgot it, but I didn't. I've remembered
18 that experience all my life. The consequences just aren't
19 worth the sin, you know? I was learning about consequences.
20 They are all over the place. Good and bad.

21 Q. Yes, sir.

22 A. So, henceforth, I decided that if it didn't belong
23 to me I didn't want anything to do with it.

1 Years later I happened to be around Satchel Paige. His
2 name was Leroy, but they called him "Old Satch." He was a
3 black pitcher who was very, very good. Maybe you've heard
4 about him?

5 Q. Yes, sir.

6 A. Well, he gave five items of advice, and I admired
7 him so much that I memorized those things. One of them was,
8 "Go easy on the vices; the social rumble ain't worth it."
9 That advice applied to that gourd. The rumble that came out
10 of it just wasn't worth it.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. I always thought that was very good advice. I
13 remember my comment to myself was, "Right you are, Satchel,"
14 and it wasn't long before I found the same thing in the Bible.
15 You don't take things that belong to other people.

16 Q. Sir, you keep mentioning that you and Jimmy were
17 very close.

18 A. Oh, yes.

19 Q. What about your sisters? Were you close to them?

20 A. Between myself and Ruth there were, let's see, 8
21 years, something like that, and then with Joan, 13 years. So
22 there was quite an age gap. My brother and I were really
23 inseparable, and the girls were the same way. So in a sense,

1 Rob, it was a different era. We loved our little sisters and,
2 of course, even to this day I do all I can to help them.

3 Q. Yes, sir. Where were your parents during most of
4 this time?

5 A. I've never known anyone that worked harder than my
6 dad. As a matter of fact, he worked 7 days a week. He was a
7 foreman (they called it a "face boss") in this coal mine. The
8 mine was divided into several sections. He was the boss of
9 one of the sections. They mine coal by making tunnels into
10 the vast deposits of coal we have throughout the country. You
11 know?

12 Q. Yes, sir.

13 A. His job was to see that production was at the
14 maximum. I think the section bosses competed with each other.
15 That would only be human nature. But another thing that
16 concerned him very much was safety. It was primarily
17 dangerous work, because the roof could cave in and cause
18 injuries and death. He would go out even on Sunday mornings.
19 It always bothered me that he didn't go to church as the rest
20 of us did. "What's going to happen to him if he never goes to
21 church?" was one of the worries that I had as a kid. But he
22 was out there—he called it "running the mine," always looking
23 for anything that might harm his men.

24 Q. Yes, sir.

1 A. He was a good guy, and he was a good leader. He had
2 great concern for the well-being of his employees.

3 Q. Yes, sir. You inherited that trait from him,
4 obviously?

5 A. I learned it from life's experiences. Early on I
6 began to observe people, especially leaders. What did they
7 have that most people lacked? For instance, one of the
8 greatest guys I ever worked for was a four-star general named
9 Hamilton H. Howze. I noticed that he always had the welfare
10 of the people that worked for him foremost in his mind. And
11 all of the truly great leaders that I've seen, both in the
12 civilian life and in my military service, had that trait. I
13 always tried to be that way myself.

14 Q. You mentioned that you moved somewhat frequently
15 during your childhood. Were most of these moves in the
16 Midwest?

17 A. Yes, central Illinois. Springfield is the state
18 capitol. We lived in that part of the state. Everyone knows
19 where that is. These little towns were essentially coal mine
20 communities. I don't know why we decided to move from one to
21 the other, except the last one, Taylorville. I call it my
22 hometown. We lived close to one of the mines in Kincaid.
23 After I graduated from grade school, the folks were concerned
24 whether the high school was good enough. It probably wasn't

1 in the annals of select educational schools. So they moved to
2 Taylorville, the county seat, so I could go to a better high
3 school. It was a fine school. Wonderful teachers.

4 Q. After you finished high school did your family stay
5 in that area?

6 A. Yes, Taylorville was home. I only lived there 6
7 years, myself; I went through high school there. I worked in
8 a coal mine there, and helped the folks financially for 2
9 years. Then I went to college.

10 I recall we were living in Edinburg when my sister Ruth
11 was born on August 2, 1926. I was 8 years old and I realized
12 what was happening. My brother was oblivious of the change in
13 my mother's shape or condition as she went through the stages
14 of the pregnancy, and other indications of imminent
15 childbirth. I remember my mother went to bed one afternoon,
16 the doctor and the midwife arrived, and Jimmy was very upset.
17 He came to me in tears and said, "You gotta get her out of
18 bed." And, he wailed. "I want Mommy out of bed." When he
19 saw the new arrival and I explained that this little redheaded
20 girl was his sister—I tried to tell him about the facts of
21 life, but he wasn't consoled. Still a little young to
22 understand.

23 Q. That sounds like a difficult task, sir.

1 A. I had quite a time with that. We—another story
2 about growing up, Rob. Am I going too deeply into this? From
3 where we lived, to go downtown, and really to go anyplace, we
4 had to cross the railroad tracks. Invariably, there'd be a
5 train parked there. Usually it was a long train. I had been
6 warned never to crawl under or over those railroad cars; to
7 stay away from them until the train left. It seemed we had to
8 wait forever for the train to move, so I disobeyed that order
9 every day. I tried climbing over the cars where they are
10 coupled. I would go up the ladder, and over the top. Often I
11 would crawl underneath the cars. I finally decided that
12 underneath was the best way. I warned Jimmy never to cross
13 unless he was with me, "Stay with me!" was my slogan. I would
14 go with him, if necessary. Since I felt certain that he was
15 going to ignore my instruction, I told him this: "If you
16 crawl under the cars and that's what you're going to be doing,
17 do it in the center of the tracks. Don't get by the wheels."
18 He asked, "Why?" I said, "Well, when it starts, then you've
19 got a little leeway on getting out of there when you hear the
20 noise."

21 He asked, "What do you do if it does start?" I told him,
22 "You just go as fast as you can. Just think that a bear's
23 after you, or a dog, and get out of there." I don't know how
24 many times we crawled under those cars. Another thing that

1 we'd do concerned the boxes on the wheels. Inside those boxes
2 (they would open easily back then) were heavily oiled cloths,
3 rags, and so forth. We discovered those would burn, and the
4 fire would last for a long time. We'd take those things and
5 have a bonfire for no good reason. Years later I saw a law
6 that states it's a very serious offense to do what we did.
7 You don't fool around with those things and avoid trouble.

8 Edinburg's population was about 2,000 people, and I
9 recall most of them were very nice. Can't recall a single
10 stinker. One of our neighbors was a guy named John Potts. A
11 lot of people named Potts lived around there. He lived on the
12 next street, and he was the epitome of a grand, old,
13 grandfatherly type.

14 Q. Noble and wise, sir?

15 A. Oh, yes. Exactly. He was the very picture of it.
16 Again—leadership. He was exceptionally kind to Jimmy and me.
17 He always welcomed us over. He'd make all sorts of things
18 that appealed to boys of our age. He made several slingshots
19 for me, and taught me how to use them. I became a pretty good
20 shooter. We had a Radio Flyer wagon; I'm sure you fellows
21 don't remember those things, but we had them in my youth. Mr.
22 Potts made it into a covered wagon. He showed us how to soak
23 the laths overnight. They'd bend, and would become the
24 supports for the canvas cover. And then he taught us how to

1 attach this to the bed of the wagon, so we had a covered wagon
2 like they had in the movies. After he'd finished our wagon,
3 he said, "Well, Kenny, you're the oldest and you're the
4 biggest, so you've got to be the horse, okay? And since Jimmy
5 fits nicely into the wagon anyway, he's the driver." I
6 must've pulled that kid a thousand miles. He wanted to go
7 somewhere all the time.

8 My first crush came about this time. It was on my first
9 grade teacher; I'll never forget her. I don't guess you
10 remember Clara Bow, the "It" girl? She was dark-headed, with
11 bangs and a sweet smile. That's what Othell Nutt looked like;
12 I thought she was the prettiest lady ever. I didn't have the
13 opportunity to tell her that until I had grown up and she was
14 a middle-aged woman. But it seemed to please her. Again,
15 this phenomenon of having a crush on your teacher or a movie
16 star or whoever, I think, is a natural part of the growing-up
17 process. Nothing to be alarmed about.

18 Q. Yes, sir.

19 A. In 1927 we moved to Kincaid. This is where Joan was
20 born. Only a short distance, but it was a promotion for my
21 father of some sort and he wanted to be as close as possible
22 to his work.

23 With our move to Kincaid I experienced some life changes.
24 Shortly after we were settled some of the boys my age asked me

1 to play baseball with them. I hadn't played much before that,
2 but I could throw fairly well. There was a sandlot near our
3 home, so I joined my newfound friends. No one wanted to be
4 the catcher. The reason for that was we didn't have a mask or
5 any kind of protection, so getting behind there could be a
6 little dangerous; if a ball is fouled, you might get hit. The
7 injuries to the catcher's body due to foul balls were
8 frequent. I volunteered for the position nonetheless. Later,
9 I found a second-hand mask which I cleaned up and painted.
10 This began a long period of endless innings behind the plate.

11 My father was pushing me into baseball. His influence
12 was strong. As a boy, you will recall, he played with one of
13 his best friends, "Sunny Jim" Bottomley. When Bottomley went
14 into pro baseball and eventually became one of the greatest
15 players in his era, my father often opined that Bottomley was
16 one of the most fortunate of men on the face of the earth. If
17 he could help it, he never missed a radio broadcast of a St.
18 Louis Cardinals game. He didn't get to hear many because of
19 his work, but when he would listen to a Cardinal game we
20 didn't disturb him. Every night when he'd come home from work
21 he'd want to know how I did, first, in baseball and then in
22 school. And the first question usually was, "Did you get any
23 hits today?"

1 He had to be at the mine 6 days a week, and on Sunday
2 morning he had to "run" the mine; that meant 7 days a week out
3 there. Again, running the mine meant a walk through the
4 section that he supervised in order to assure that all was
5 well. I never heard him complain about his work. All his
6 life, he worked very hard, but he never complained about it.
7 We were going through the Depression, which was worse than I
8 can describe. I've always said that there were two things
9 that you can't describe, that you can't get the full picture
10 of, and one was the Depression and the other is war. How do
11 you describe that, the feelings, fears, etc.?

12 Q. Yes, sir.

13 A. The Depression was upon us. He felt blessed to have
14 a job. The Peabody Coal Company owned and operated several
15 mines in central Illinois. The superintendent overall was a
16 fellow named Ben August. We called him Mr. August, although
17 he was on the young side. I recall he had a degree in mining
18 engineering, and his salary was the unheard of sum of \$1,000 a
19 month. We thought that was multi-millionaire stuff. I recall
20 thinking that if I could reach an income of \$200 a month, I'll
21 take it right now for the rest of my life, and I would be
22 content. It wasn't unusual at all for families during that
23 time in our community to have an average income of \$25 a week;
24 that was pretty standard.

1 We all had gardens. Jimmy and I kept our plants. We had
2 plants assigned to us, and we'd water these plants and weed
3 them. Jimmy developed favorites among his tomato plants, and
4 you could tell which ones he liked, because they were the big
5 ones. He'd water them more, a little extra. Our plot wasn't
6 exceptionally large, but amazingly enough, a small garden can
7 provide a lot of food, particularly in that Illinois land,
8 which was so fertile.

9 Our biggest crop was potatoes. My mother had a lot of
10 ways to prepare them. Many times at night I could overhear my
11 parents discussing how they were going to make ends meet.
12 They would consider what else they could do without, but the
13 belt had been tightened about as far as possible.

14 Q. That must have been difficult.

15 A. I recall homeless men coming to the house, begging
16 for food. My mother would always feed them, but never allow
17 them to enter the house, because one couldn't be certain of
18 their intentions. If it were raining or snowing, they'd eat
19 their meal in the shed in our backyard. I felt so sorry for
20 those fellows, a great deal of compassion, and it made me
21 think about my own future. It's really influenced me to this
22 day. I don't waste anything. Well I try not to do so.

23 Along the way I developed a very strong friendship with
24 two Norwegian boys who lived on our block. They were my age;

1 their names were Hartley and Elmer Larsen. Their father was
2 the superintendent of the local silk mill. This business was
3 located in a very large and impressive (to me at least) brick
4 building; with about 50 employees, mostly ladies. His product
5 was superior; good as it comes. His wife, Olga Larsen, spoke
6 practically no English. She was a very nice lady. She always
7 greeted me with a big smile, made me welcome, and gave me
8 cookies. Hartley and I were in the same grade. At this time
9 it was the fourth grade. Elmer was a year older. He was born
10 in 1917 and was in the fifth grade. In early 1932, Mr. Larsen
11 sold the business, and took his family to Norway. He blamed
12 the Depression. Eventually, while I was overseas in Germany,
13 I went to see them in Norway.

14 One of my classmates was a girl named Wilma Kears, who
15 was a cute little thing. She lived on our street also. She
16 blushed easily, very shy. One day she came by and asked if I
17 would like to walk to school with her. I told her that I
18 would very much like to do so, but she'd have to let me carry
19 her books. I'd been told that if you walk a girl to school,
20 you've got to carry her books. Wilma always had a lot of
21 books.

22 Q. So you reaped the benefits, sir of both muscular
23 endurance and chivalry.

1 A. Exactly. Well put, Rob. She had a boyfriend,
2 though, an admirer who was a tough guy, a fellow named Alec
3 Maxwell. Alec was sort of a bully. Wilma kept adding to what
4 she wanted to take to school, and with my own stuff, it got to
5 be a pretty good load.

6 Q. How old are you at this time, sir?

7 A. Around 9, fourth grade, maybe 10. Alec, her
8 boyfriend (that's a little young to have a boyfriend)
9 confronted me at school. He told me that Wilma was his girl,
10 and I'd better stay away from her. This was my first
11 experience with being bullied. He told me that if I didn't,
12 I'd have to suffer the consequences. He actually said that if
13 I didn't do as he said, he would beat me up.

14 I didn't reply. Again, it was my first experience of
15 being threatened. I didn't particularly like it. I was
16 disturbed about it. Nonetheless, the next morning there was
17 Wilma waiting for me with a big smile. She asked me why I was
18 so quiet, and I said, "Oh, just thinkin'." She said, "About
19 your schoolwork?" I said, "Nope; something more important
20 than that." She assumed I was thinking about Alec and what he
21 was going to do to me, and so she fell silent. She didn't say
22 much more about it. I saw Alec peering at us as we walked
23 into the school building and saw him approaching. He was a
24 good-sized guy and my heart sank a little bit. When she

1 walked away, he threatened me. I remained silent. I didn't
2 know what to say. This went on for some time.

3 Wilma and I, however, were good friends and I wasn't
4 about to back off from escorting her to school. But all of
5 this was a good lesson, too. I began to like Wilma very much.

6 Q. Tell me more about school, sir.

7 A. I did well in school. The teacher would give us a
8 list of words and their meaning. I found out I had a little
9 talent in this respect, and maybe that's what led me into law.
10 I don't know, but she'd give us this list of words and she'd
11 allow us to peruse the definitions for a short time, usually
12 about 5 minutes. Half the class would line up on one side of
13 the room, the other half on the other side. Then she'd ask
14 the first student to define the first word. If he or she
15 could, he or she would remain standing. If he or she
16 couldn't, the student would have to take a seat. That way it
17 was pared down. The question would be passed to the other
18 side when a student couldn't answer. If the student answered
19 correctly, the next question went to the other side. The last
20 student left standing was the winner. Often that was me.
21 This was called our vocabulary-building exercise. I seemed to
22 be able to remember those things pretty well. Other times, it
23 was spelling, and I didn't fare so well there. When I've
24 talked to young teachers just starting out, I've often told

1 them how impressed I was by this little exercise, and
2 recommending that they do it. If I were teaching that'd be
3 one thing I would do, along with variations on it.

4 One side was the blue team and the other was the red
5 team. The kids would cheer for their team members and
6 spirited camaraderie developed.

7 I always enjoyed studying, and looked forward to school.
8 I was pretty good at it. Someone had given us a large,
9 reddish-colored book, a heavy volume. The name of it was "The
10 Volume Library." This encyclopedia claimed to have everything
11 worth knowing under one cover. I always thought it should
12 have been called "The One-Volume Library." It was well done,
13 and over a period of years I read it from cover to cover.
14 I've often thought about how much I learned from such a small
15 source.

16 Q. Yes, sir.

17 A. It reminds me of a fellow that said that he had
18 learned everything he knew at his mother's knee. Then he
19 added, "It was heavily tattooed."

20 In addition to the threats from Alec Maxwell, I was
21 challenged quite a few times by other students. This was a
22 pretty tough neighborhood or town (one neighborhood was the
23 whole town) because we had so many immigrants. People were
24 coming in from Scotland, Ireland, Italy—a lot from Italy, the

1 miners mostly. Because of this change from one country to
2 another which took time they'd be a couple of years older than
3 the norm and, consequently, bigger.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. I was challenged a number of times by a few of the
6 fellows, and there was really never any reason or cause for
7 it. I remember my mother sending me to the grocery store
8 across the tracks, into the Italian section of town. It was
9 owned and operated by an older gentleman named Nick Uneda.
10 That was the name of the store, Uneda, pronounced "You Need-a
11 Groceries." He was very nice.

12 We had a lot of immigrants, as I say, mostly Italian, in
13 Kincaid and other towns where the mines were located. I
14 always thought the Italian girls were blessed with beauty, and
15 they were. They were good-looking. And now, living in San
16 Antonio, I see the same with the Hispanics. Unfortunately,
17 after about age 20, the weight starts piling on. That's what
18 happened in Kincaid with these Italian girls. What a pity.

19 When I went to this store, usually there'd be a group of
20 boys standing around outside. They were led by a fellow named
21 Leonardo Pilate. Even as sub-teenagers—some weren't
22 teenagers yet, others were a little bit older—they indicated
23 they were gonna fix me when I came out of the store. I was a
24 little worried. More than a little worried, I was scared. I

1 was too proud to confess it to my mom and dad. I knew what he
2 would have said, anyway. Mr. Uneda never would let those boys
3 enter the store. They peered through the window and watched
4 my progress. He'd sack up my groceries. Usually it would be
5 two big paper bags full. He'd let me out the back door. I
6 tried to escape from these fellows. Usually they would catch
7 me. They'd scatter the groceries around and then pummel me.
8 I was never really hurt, but my pride suffered, and I was
9 humiliated. I'd get pushed around, the groceries were all
10 over the place. I'd have to pick these up, and repack the
11 bags. My pride was in shambles. but I was too proud to tell
12 anybody about what had happened. Other minor incidents also
13 occurred. Jimmy'd get picked on, and, oh boy, I was ready to
14 fight whenever that happened. He was such a sweet kid.

15 I think the whole point that I'm trying to get across is
16 that bullying was a problem with which I was going to have to
17 contend. It's more of a problem now, according to the news
18 reports. Will this keep going on? And if so, what's the
19 solution? Something had to be done. I had to find an answer
20 to it. That is what I kept telling myself.

21 Occasionally, my mother would send me to Mr. Russell's
22 grocery store on Main Street. I always liked to go there. He
23 was a friendly man, and he kept a box of chitterlings

1 available for children. Do you know what chitterlings are?

2 Probably not. We called them "chitlins."

3 Q. Yes, sir.

4 A. These came in square, 18-inch wooden boxes. I didn't
5 know what it was, but it was tasty, and Mr. Russell would give
6 it to us, big chunks of it. I learned later that it is the
7 small intestines of pigs. These were boiled until they became
8 a solid mass. Then the stuff was salted some way. It tasted
9 like oven-fried chicken skin. At any rate, Mr. Russell would
10 give me a big chunk of this, and usually one for Jimmy. We
11 liked it very much. I ate it like candy until I learned it
12 was pig's intestines.

13 Q. That kind of deterred you from craving it, sir?

14 A. Yes, it did, Rob. Today, I refuse to even think
15 about it. Ugh! To reach Main Street in Kincaid, I had to
16 cross a large field. My mother would send me to various
17 places in the town. We seldom drove anywhere. On one
18 occasion, I had been sent either to the bank, the First
19 National Bank of Kincaid, or I was going to have to go near
20 there. As I headed for the bank, I had to cross a big field.
21 By the way, I think this bank still stands; it was quite an
22 attractive building. The front of it had a façade of white
23 marble blocks. They kept them pretty well cleaned up so
24 they'd reflect light in an attractive way. Anyway, I was

1 crossing this field one day and I witnessed my first and only
2 bank robbery.

3 Q. Wow, you saw a bank being robbed?

4 A. I heard, first of all, what sounded like fire
5 crackers. Then I looked at the bank, although it was still a
6 considerable distance away. However, I got as close to the
7 action as I could. I was always a curious kid. I saw several
8 men with handguns come running out the front door. They
9 turned and fired. It was like a movie, you know?

10 Q. I can't imagine, sir.

11 A. These guys continued firing, and then piled into an
12 open touring car and sped away. I counted seven of them, all
13 dressed in business suits—black suits—and wearing hats.
14 They looked like businessmen. I stayed behind a tree because
15 of the danger of getting hit with a stray bullet. After the
16 excitement had simmered down, I went to the bank, but wasn't
17 allowed to enter. By this time our policeman had arrived. We
18 had one cop in town, an elderly guy that couldn't do much. I
19 was surprised, no one was shot or injured. The front of the
20 bank showed evidence of this escapade. It was nicked, you
21 know, where the bullets struck it. They pockmarked it. The
22 last time I was in Kincaid, I went to look at that bank to see
23 if the holes were still there, and they were. It's been at
24 least a decade since I last saw the bank.

1 I learned later that the crime was committed by the
2 infamous Shelton Gang of southern Illinois. This was
3 Prohibition time, and the Shelton people had a lock on the
4 control of booze.

5 Q. Yes, sir.

6 A. A fellow named Charlie Berger was a crime boss.
7 There were wars between the Shelton gang and Berger's gang for
8 a long, long time. During the Depression, bank robbery was
9 prevalent. Nowadays, you don't hear about it very much. Once
10 in a while some nut will go in the bank and give somebody a
11 note, but in those days they'd drive up, pour out of their
12 car, and go in and hold everybody up. They made no secret of
13 who they were. Everybody knew it was the Shelton Gang; they'd
14 say so. Those were the days of John Dillinger, Bonnie and
15 Clyde Barrow, Al Capone, and others.

16 Time marches on. There was another incident that comes to
17 mind concerning my 12th birthday. That was October 31st 1930.
18 The Kodak Company advertised that they'd give a box camera to
19 every boy and girl who reached 12 years of age that year.
20 That was my first camera. I had to apply for it, but I
21 couldn't apply until my birthday. I did and I'll tell you I
22 was so excited when this gift arrived. Pictures were black
23 and white, and one had to stay within a prescribed distance
24 from the object being photographed, 10 feet or so.

1 Q. How were the pictures?

2 A. They weren't bad. I thought it was a neat gift.

3 I played baseball every day; well, almost every day.

4 When I had the chance I'd even play a few innings before

5 school started. I listened to as many St. Louis Cardinal

6 games as possible on the radio. Of course, the main

7 attraction was the great man himself, "Sunny Jim" Bottomley.

8 I remember one thrill that the family had, particularly my

9 dad. We had gone somewhere on a Sunday. It was off-season.

10 When we got back there was a note on the door from Bottomley,

11 and it said, "Chuck, I've come to see you, but you're never

12 home," or something to that effect. My dad's name was

13 Charles, but everyone called him "Chuck." He was so thrilled

14 with those few words. This great man himself, "Sunny Jim"

15 Bottomley, had come to visit. Pop showed the note to everyone

16 in town.

17 Kincaid was, as I've said, a small town, with a small

18 population, but we did have some outstanding leaders. One was

19 my principal in grade school. His name was Roscoe Potts. A

20 lot of people, as I mentioned earlier, were named Potts in

21 that community. Looking back I realize his was based on his

22 devotion to his students; he took a big interest in every one.

23 He used to say, "You all are so precious to me." That's

24 pretty nice. It bothered him that many of the students could

1 not or would not go on to high school following graduation
2 from elementary school. If the boys were able enough the
3 families would want them to go to the mine at age 16 or
4 earlier. Some would work full-time on their farms. I
5 estimate that about half of my class went on to high school.
6 My mother and dad only went to the seventh grade, and that
7 situation hadn't changed very much in the last 20 years or so.
8 The kids were not getting the education that they needed.
9 Times were hard, and if the youngster lived on a farm the help
10 he or she provided was very important to their families.

11 The same was true of the mining community. As I
12 mentioned earlier when a boy turned 16 he could go to work in
13 the mines. They didn't pay much attention to age if the lad
14 was big enough and strong enough to do the work. One would go
15 to work before the sun came up, and it was dark by the time he
16 returned to the surface. One could go for quite a while and
17 not see any daylight.

18 [RECORDING ENDS/END OF SESSION 1]

19 Q. You mentioned earlier that Mr. Potts, your
20 principal, was a role model to you. Can you tell me more
21 about him?

22 A. Oh, yes. He was a very decent man. I recall him
23 telling me how much it bothered him to have a student drop out
24 of grade school without any hope of going on to higher

1 education. Well, the year was 1929, the Great Depression had
2 begun. Times were hard. Mr. Potts told me that he wanted my
3 graduating class to have as nice a graduation day as possible,
4 because this might be their last one. For about half of the
5 students, it was. I felt this was very thoughtful, typically
6 kind of him. I recall how LBJ kept a list of what he called
7 the "good 'uns", u-n-s. I didn't maintain such a list, but if
8 I had, Roscoe Potts would probably have been in the first
9 place.

10 Two of my grade school friends—Hugh and Eddie Petty—
11 were brothers. They were the adopted sons of Norman and
12 Lucille Gallagher, who experienced a lot of sad, unfortunate
13 circumstances. During their allotted spans on this earth they
14 seemed to have nothing but trouble. As a result, the boys
15 were adopted by a Mr. and Mrs. Petty, who lived in Kincaid,
16 while they were still toddlers; both of them were very good-
17 looking kids. Hugh was 2 years older than Eddie—tall, curly
18 black hair. He was quiet, and could be charming. Eddie was
19 muscular and of average intelligence, I would say, rather an
20 animated kind of a guy. Eddie and I were natural competitors
21 in the classroom and on the playground. I often thought that
22 we'd face off some day and settle our differences. I have to
23 admit I didn't look forward to it. It seems that was the way
24 we were headed because we were both attracted to the same

1 lass, a girl named Demaris Coleman. She was a very pretty 12-
2 year-old, who in many ways was out of my league. My dad asked
3 me more than once whether Demaris was advanced for her age, as
4 he put it. I assumed he was referring to her intellectual
5 acumen. I assured him that she was not, and he dropped the
6 matter. Not long after that, Eddie told me that he had been
7 informed by his mother that Demaris had "fits," and he implied
8 that I could have her. He relinquished all claims.

9 She may have had some faults, but "fits" was not one of
10 them. Shortly thereafter, Demaris dumped both of us. She'd
11 taken up with an older man, she explained. Perhaps Demaris
12 was a little advanced. Eddie and I were the ones who lagged
13 behind. Many years later, on a visit to Illinois, I asked a
14 mutual friend what had happened to the Petty boys. What he
15 told me was pure hearsay and, as we know, such stuff is not
16 admissible in a court of law. I've learned through the years
17 to check out what people tell me if it's a matter of much
18 importance. With that caveat, I continue.

19 It appears that not long after graduation from Kincaid
20 High School, the boys changed their last name to that of their
21 biological father, Gallagher, and began robbing banks. Hugh
22 would approach the teller and pass the victim a note that
23 stated that he would shoot unless all the cash the teller had
24 was placed in the briefcase that he produced. Eddie,

1 meanwhile, hung back and protected Hugh's back. Outside, a
2 car and a driver waited. They were captured after a dozen or
3 so escapades. Both pleaded guilty and were sentenced to long
4 terms in federal prison. No one seems to know where they are
5 located now.

6 About a month before our grade school graduation Mr.
7 Potts sent for me. As usual, I was certain I'd done something
8 that merited punishment. As usual, I couldn't think of what
9 it might be. With a big smile he told me I would be the
10 valedictorian of the graduating class. I wasn't sure what I
11 was expected to do, and Mr. Potts said, "Of course, you know,
12 you'll deliver the farewell oration at the commencement." He
13 didn't offer any assistance, and to my surprise no one asked
14 what I intended to say. Mr. Potts had arranged to use the
15 local movie theater for the ceremony. It was to be held on
16 the last Friday of May in 1932, and the ceremonies would begin
17 at 2 p.m.

18 When the time came, I was very impressed with the
19 preparations. Our school colors were white and yellow and we
20 had streamers all over the place. There was ample room for
21 the families to be seated comfortably in the theater chairs.
22 Down front was a piano that had seen a lot of use during the
23 silent picture days. The pianist would play fast or slow
24 depending on the tempo of the film. Eddie Petty played this

1 battered instrument at appropriate times during the graduation
2 festivities. He only knew three pieces. I know this because
3 we both took lessons from Mrs. Norwich, a very nice lady in
4 her 30's, who called us "Darling". We had our lessons once a
5 week at a cost of a dollar per session. I enjoyed these but
6 my friends called me a sissy because of it. They made fun of
7 my renditions as well so I quit. I always regretted the
8 decision. This, however, helped me to realize that I had to
9 overcome letting the opinions of others influence me.

10 Back to Eddie. As I said, his musical repertoire, like
11 mine, was very limited. I could play the same three pieces he
12 knew, and I had almost added a fourth. That was going to be
13 "Little Brown Jug." I could get through halfway of it at the
14 moment, and never mastered the remainder.

15 Eddie would play his three numbers and then he would
16 reverse the order and play them again. Miraculously, the
17 audience didn't seem to catch on. They thought it was fine.
18 I noticed that Eddie was very pleased when Mr. Potts thanked
19 him, and he stood up and bowed three times to the audience. I
20 thought he was bowing once for each piece he played—and I was
21 glad he only knew three. I thought he'd never stop and let us
22 proceed with the graduation. He liked the attention.

23 The program consisted of various students reading poems
24 or parts of famous speeches, or a review of the

1 accomplishments of the various groups during our formative
2 eight years. Finally, my turn arrived, and I marched up onto
3 the stage. I noticed the crowd getting a little restless and
4 bored (at least, I surmised that) and I thought I'd better not
5 take too much time. That's always a wise way to approach such
6 a rendition. When I attempted to prepare my speech I couldn't
7 think of any theme to follow. I finally recalled hearing
8 someone say, "When you tell 'em they're overworked and
9 underpaid, you can't go far wrong." It impressed me so much
10 that I built my address around thanking our parents,
11 grandparents, school administrators, the audience, and
12 everyone else in town I could think of. I closed with the
13 admonition that implied that, "You've all done your part, now
14 it's up to us." It seemed to go over pretty well—in spite of
15 the fact that I used some big words that they had probably
16 never heard before. There were a lot of tears, a lot of well-
17 wishing and congratulations all over the place when it ended.
18 So much for grade school. Bring on higher learning. Here we
19 come. The future did not look promising.

20 My younger sister, Joan, was a darling baby and
21 everything centered around her. Ruth had joined the family on
22 August 2, 1926, and was 5 years of age when Joan was born.
23 She became a substitute mother and took care of her baby

1 sister much of the time. The girls have been inseparable ever
2 since.

3 My father was a strict disciplinarian insofar as my
4 brother and I were concerned. He was especially hard on
5 Jimmy, and often at the evening meal he'd cross-examine Jim
6 about his activities—seemed to suspect that he'd gotten into
7 some gang that was prone to mischief. I felt sorry for Jimmy
8 when he had to endure such third-degree treatment, but I was
9 hesitant to intervene. It would have made the situation
10 worse. However, it did teach me that this was not the way to
11 treat a child, and I resolved never to be guilty of the same
12 mistake.

13 Most of the time during those formative years, Jimmy was
14 with me. He did whatever I did, and I would, if necessary,
15 protect him from hell or high water. I began to notice that
16 he was smart. He made friends easily. He didn't study as
17 much as I did. He gravitated towards outdoor sports, hunting,
18 fishing, that sort of thing. My interests tended to be more
19 towards team activities.

20 Shortly after my grade school graduation in the spring of
21 '32, my mother told me that we would move to Taylorville that
22 summer, a distance of about 25 miles. I wasn't given the
23 reason, but she indicated that the Taylorville schools were

1 superior to those we had in Kincaid. I welcomed the
2 opportunity to move on to bigger and better things.

3 I'd heard about the American Legion baseball team in
4 Taylorville, and since I was almost 13 and eligible as far as
5 age was concerned, I was anxious to try out for it. I
6 contacted Mr. Boyd Dappert, the Christian County engineer—
7 Taylorville was the county seat. He was the coach and manager
8 of the team. He was also one of the leaders of the local
9 American Legion post, which was named after his brother who'd
10 been killed in World War I. Boyd had also been sent to
11 France. He served as an infantry sergeant in '17 and '18, and
12 saw a lot of combat. However, he refused to discuss it.

13 I tried out, made the team, and became the starting
14 catcher. I was in seventh heaven. We played on an average of
15 twice a week against other teams within a radius of a hundred
16 miles of Taylorsville. One of our first games after I joined
17 was against the Kincaid team. During the warm-up period I'd
18 gone to the first base area to loosen up, and shortly
19 thereafter an acquaintance, Tulio Pasquale, approached me, and
20 I greeted him. He didn't speak but kept walking toward me.
21 My attention was on the batted balls coming my way. Suddenly
22 Tulio threw a football-type block into me and I was thrown off
23 balance. He kept on walking and I called to him, "Why did you
24 do that?" And he replied, "Because you're a scab."

1 I was in a quandary. I wanted to go after him and fight
2 it out, but I worried that if I did that, I might not have
3 been allowed to play in the game. It appeared that no one
4 else had noticed the altercation, so I called to Tulio, "I'll
5 settle with you later." He didn't answer. I recall thinking
6 once more that I had to find a solution to this sort of thing,
7 this bullying crap. It was becoming too prevalent, and also
8 it wasn't doing my confidence and self-reliance any good.

9 Q. Yes, sir.

10 A. The miners who worked in the Peabody Coal Company
11 mines belonged to the United Mine Workers of America (UMWA).
12 The head of the union was the famous John L. Lewis. He lived
13 in the Washington, DC, area. Well actually, he lived in
14 Alexandria, Virginia. He was a very powerful man. I don't
15 think he was totally honest, but he was effective. He was
16 feared and admired by millions. To control a large union like
17 UMWA, meant the control of millions of votes, and the
18 politicians hated this bushy-eyed, old man. A new union
19 called the Progressive Mine Workers of America wanted the
20 miners to change unions, mainly to get away from the
21 despicable John L. The situation went from bad to worse.

22 My father worked in a supervisory position, so he
23 couldn't be a union man. Instead, he was a "company man." We
24 should have been immune from the conflict, but such was not

1 the case. A fellow named Eddie Newman was the most feared of
2 the Progressive tough guys. At every opportunity he'd beat up
3 someone simply because the victim belonged to the UMWA.

4 The summer of 1932 was memorable. I was playing lots of
5 baseball, and wore a nice uniform. I loved the attention I
6 received when I got a hit or made an exceptional play. I
7 remember one game in Clinton, Illinois. The batter hit a foul
8 ball. It went heavenward. It came down very close to the
9 back screen which was overrun by vines that should not have
10 been there. I put my glove into the leaves, and I was the
11 most surprised guy in the park when I felt the ball hit my
12 mitt and stay there. I held the ball up, the umpire signaled
13 the batter was out, and the small crowd stood and applauded.
14 I smiled over that experience for the rest of the week—maybe
15 longer.

16 Q. Aside from baseball, what else was going on?

17 A. That summer but I scouted around for some kind of
18 employment. Things were pretty grim from an economic
19 standpoint. I mowed lawns, washed cars, ran errands for
20 pennies, and finally was hired by the Breeze Courier Newspaper
21 Company as a carrier. These papers were usually ready to be
22 delivered about 4 p.m. I had around 75 homes on my route.
23 The paper was published 6 days a week, no Sunday paper. The
24 cost was 15 cents a week. I had to pay the newspaper 10 cents

1 per customer for a week. I kept a nickel. If the customer
2 wouldn't or couldn't pay, the carrier had to do it. The
3 newspaper tolerated no loss to itself.

4 When we picked up our papers we were given two extra
5 copies. These were to be used in case we got a new start. We
6 were urged to solicit new customers at every opportunity. I
7 took one of the free copies home. The first thing my father
8 wanted when he came home from work was a cold beer and the
9 paper. He read every word, and it didn't take too long. The
10 average paper ran only six to eight pages. And by the way,
11 across the masthead of the paper were the words, "The Breeze
12 Blows Everywhere." Real class. The company was owned by Mr.
13 Donald Jewell, Sr.; his brother, Rex, was in charge of
14 circulation; and his son, Don, Jr., was an assistant sports
15 writer. They were nice people.

16 One day I got two new customers, happy day; however, I
17 had to use both of my extra papers. I had none left to take
18 home. The company would not give us any more extras in order
19 to forestall the very thing I was doing. However, each
20 evening Rex Jewell threw out a dozen or so papers retained
21 from the previous year. The date was June 17, 1932, and out
22 of the rack came about a dozen or so papers dated June 17,
23 1931. These were throwaways. I was welcome to take one or

1 more of them. Neatly folded it looked like new, unless you
2 checked the date.

3 I took it home and put it beside my dad's chair, as was
4 my custom. He came in; sat down; reached for his paper. A
5 moment or so later he sprang out of his chair and
6 expostulated, "The son of a bitch has done it again." My
7 mother came running into the room, and the younger children
8 went to their bedroom. My mother asked, "Who has done what?"
9 He answered, "John L. Lewis, that's who. The bastard ought to
10 be hung. He's cheated the miners out of their pensions. He
11 did the same thing last year." I started to explain, but then
12 thought better of it and kept quiet. Dad kept grumbling, but
13 by the time supper was ready his attention was elsewhere. I
14 never did give him the true story. Years later he was
15 visiting me in Washington D.C. and asked me to take him to the
16 John L. Lewis home. He wanted to see where this great man
17 lived. I took him there in 1971. I'll explain later. He
18 admired him very much. I never understood why.

19 It took me about two hours to complete my paper route.
20 Usually, I ran most of the way. The great radio program "Amos
21 and Andy" came on at 6:15, and I didn't want to miss it. I
22 still remember many of the presentations. The actors were
23 terrific and the scripts hilarious. Freeman Gosden and

1 Charlie Correll played the male roles, and what a joy they
2 were. They were so gifted.

3 Q. What was your favorite part of the show, sir?

4 A. I can illustrate that, I think, by telling you one
5 of the episodes. What happened was that the Kingfish had a
6 call from the federal government, who said, "Look, we've got a
7 proposition for you. We want somebody to go up to the North
8 Pole. This is where all the weather emanates. You'll be
9 supplied with a radio, and you will notify us in Washington
10 what the weather is so we'll know what's coming."

11 "That job will pay \$300 a month. And you'll be up there
12 —the contract calls for a year." The Kingfish promised to
13 think about it. And, oh boy, he wanted that money, but he
14 didn't want to go to the North Pole. He went to Andy and he
15 said, "Andy, I got a proposition for you." And he told him
16 about going up to the North Pole. He'd be up there so long,
17 and he'd get \$150 a month. Kingfish, as his agent, would keep
18 the other half. Andy was betwixt and between. He said,
19 "Kingfish, I realize that's a good proposition, but I don't
20 know." He continued, "You know, the nights up there, they is
21 six months long." The Kingfish replied, "Sho', sho', boy.
22 That's right. But when you looks at it that way, you only
23 gonna be up there two, three days." Well, things like that

1 I've laughed at for years. That's funny, Rob. Also, there's
2 a homily—"how you look at things."

3 Q. Sounds good, sir.

4 A. They were so gifted as entertainers.

5 I was blessed with good teachers in high school. As a
6 group they were older and more experienced than what we seem
7 to have today. Looking back I can see I didn't master some of
8 the courses as I should have. Math was one of these. French
9 was another. I never thought I'd use a foreign language, and
10 I felt the requirement was just something to get through. I
11 felt the same way about Spanish, which I took in college. I
12 could have used French every day during the war years, and
13 today I live in a city where half the population is fluent in
14 Spanish. One never knows, does one?.

15 Q. It is funny how that works, sir.

16 A. During our first winter in Taylorville I learned to
17 ice-skate. I seemed to pick up the skill with ease. There
18 were streams and rivers readily available, and what fun it was
19 to explore these. I continued to ice-skate well into my adult
20 years and never failed to enjoy it.

21 Life at home tended to be tense. The Depression had
22 reached its lowest point, it turned out, and despair was the
23 mood of the day. Like our present war in Afghanistan, there
24 was no end in sight. My father worried constantly, it seemed.

1 My mother tried to tell him things would get better, but she
2 had no evidence to buttress her case.

3 As I looked back, I concluded two events are worse than
4 people today realize. The first is the Depression and second
5 is the war. Fortunately, one tends to forget the bad and the
6 ugly aspects of life. Men roamed around the country looking
7 for work. They'd stop at our house asking for something to
8 eat. They always offered to do any odd jobs they could. As I
9 mentioned earlier, Mother would never let them in the house,
10 and there was never work for them to do. I must also say that
11 none were anything other than polite and considerate. I used
12 to watch the hoboes being chased off the railroad cars across
13 South Main Street, which intersected with the Wabash Railroad
14 Company tracks near us. However, as soon as the train started
15 to move, they were back in the boxcars or on top of them. A
16 hobo camp was set up just outside of town, and Jimmy and I
17 would get as close to it as we could. Usually there'd be a
18 fire and the cook would be boiling vegetables, meat scraps,
19 whatever they could obtain. This was called Mulligan Stew.

20 At home we ate a lot of cornmeal in various forms. My
21 favorite was the cornmeal loaf. My mother made it in the form
22 of a loaf of bread. She then baked the loaf, and we'd slice
23 it like bread. I'd cover mine with molasses and I never tired
24 of that concoction, but invariably felt that so much of the

1 same thing could be detrimental. We had mush for breakfast,
2 cornmeal covered with sugar and skim milk. Jimmy hated skim
3 milk, called it several names, one of which was "that ol' Blue
4 John." We also had grits, and to this day I can't tolerate
5 grits. People didn't seem to gain weight then as they do now
6 on such a diet. Cornmeal is the staple diet of many
7 individuals in south Texas, and San Antonio is high on the
8 list of the fattest cities in America.

9 For home entertainment, we had an Atwater Kent radio and
10 we often sat around it. I thought the music of the '30s and
11 '40s was absolutely tops; I still do. My favorite orchestra
12 was Guy Lombardo and his Royal Canadians. I'd listen to his
13 music by the hour. My favorite announcer when I first began
14 listening to news broadcasts was Floyd Gibbons. He'd been a
15 war correspondent and later a reporter. He had survived the
16 torpedoing of the Laconia, lost an eye at Belleau Wood in
17 World War I, and wore a trademark eye patch. He came on just
18 ahead of "Amos and Andy," which was one reason I heard him so
19 often. He rattled off the news with machine gun rapidity, and
20 was very popular; however, in 1930, for reasons unknown to me,
21 he was fired and Lowell Thomas took his place. His sponsor
22 was "The Literary Digest". I tried to sell copies of the
23 magazine along with my newspaper route among my Breeze Courier

1 customers. I felt that Lowell and I had something in common.
2 Years later, I told him that.

3 I think it was Lowell Thomas that alerted me to the
4 threat of Mussolini and Adolf Hitler. He talked, I recall, of
5 Hitler's book, *Mein Kampf*. He said that Hitler advocated the
6 conquest of Russia. Then, Lowell quipped, "That's a tall
7 assignment, Adolf. You just ask Napoleon." I thought that
8 was classy reporting. It's almost unbelievable, but at that
9 time I recall no other news reporter save Hans von Kaltenborn
10 who came on twice a week with commentary programs. Today we
11 have hundreds.

12 Taylorville had two theaters, the Majestic and the Ritz.
13 The Majestic was the better of the two. It had a nice stage,
14 orchestra pit, two sets of box seats, but it cost more than
15 twice as much as the Ritz. The Majestic was 25 cents a
16 ticket, while the Ritz was only 10 cents. Jimmy and I usually
17 went to the Ritz on Saturday afternoons. We'd see a series of
18 cowboy movies starring Tom Mix, Ken Maynard, Bob Steele, Harry
19 Carey, or perhaps a newcomer named John Wayne. Often we'd
20 have a short newsreel and then the feature film. There was
21 almost always a western playing, with titles such as, "Winds
22 of the Wasteland," "The Trail Beyond," "'Neath Arizona Skies,"
23 "Riders of Destiny," "Texas Terror," and so forth. It was
24 always difficult to get Jimmy to go home. He begged me to at

1 least let him see the serial over, and I'd usually give in.
2 We sat in the balcony. My father always joked there was more
3 action in the balcony than on the screen.

4 He would have been right except for a middle-aged,
5 overweight lady called "Miss Effie." This dear soul thought
6 it was her God-given duty in life to police the activities of
7 young people. If one put his arm around his girlfriend, Miss
8 Effie would remove it. She also allowed no smooching, and if
9 one erred in this fashion he or she could expect a light smack
10 on the back. The boys referred to her as "Miss Effie, Keeper
11 of the Morals of Christian County and Two Adjacent Townships."

12 I'll probably always remember Sunday, March the 23rd,
13 1933. America was in the depths of the Depression. A quarter
14 of all Americans were out of work, homeless and destitute.
15 Our economic system was in a state of shock. The governors of
16 New York, Illinois, and Pennsylvania had signed orders closing
17 banks. The New York Stock Exchange had suspended trading.
18 Runs had been made on more than 5,000 banks, and rural areas
19 were all being stripped of capital. If you had your money in
20 a bank that went bust, you were plain wiped out.

21 Franklin Delano Roosevelt had just been elected
22 President, and in his inaugural address he began to restore
23 hope with the phrase, "The only thing we have to fear is fear
24 itself." FDR began a series of fireside chats. He was a

1 natural for such a thing, and the country sat up and took
2 notice. His talks were inspirational and educational. He
3 explained the basics of banking, and Will Rogers quipped that
4 "He made everyone understand it, even the bankers." He
5 implored people not to hoard. An estimated 60 million people
6 listened. The effect was immediate. People began to
7 redeposit their money. Most of the closed banks reopened.
8 These broadcasts were big events, and we would all stop and
9 listen. Bill Clinton recalled hearing his grandfather talk
10 about how he sat in rapt attention; then went to work the next
11 day feeling a little different.

12 Years later I had the opportunity to escort my parents
13 through the White House, at least that portion where visitors
14 were allowed. When we came to the portrait of FDR my mother
15 began to cry and talk about, "That wonderful man who brought
16 us through the most terrible time." I don't think my father
17 ever voted any way except straight Democratic, and as far as I
18 know my sisters followed suit, effectively nullifying my
19 votes.

20 Boxing was popular in those days, and many of the towns
21 around Taylorville had fight nights. My father belonged to a
22 group that met on Friday evenings. Mr. Saul Broverman, one of
23 the city's outstanding businessmen, had given the group the
24 use of the top floor of a building. The lower floors were

1 used for business purposes. Among other endeavors, he had a
2 very successful men's clothing business.

3 My father's group started having Friday night boxing
4 matches upstairs, and these proved to be popular. He had made
5 a lot of suggestions as to how these should be run, with the
6 result that he was elected to be the man in charge of
7 arranging the program. But he did a very wise thing; he
8 turned the matter over to a fellow who worked for him at
9 Peabody No. 58 coal mine. His name was Mickey McMahan. He
10 was truly one of God's noblemen. He had been a professional
11 boxer for years. I never knew Mickey's age, but I would guess
12 he was around 35 when I first met him in '32. He was a true
13 gentleman, and possibly the best fighter pound for pound I've
14 ever known. His wife was a nice lady, but had a quick temper.
15 Her name was Mary. She spoke with an Irish brogue, which was
16 most attractive, and all of this gave me a great idea.

17 For a long time I'd looked for a solution to the problem
18 of being bullied. Now, it became clear. If I could learn to
19 box, I could engage my tormentors in a boxing match. Street
20 fighting was not only illegal, it was dangerous. There was
21 always the temptation for one to use other means to dispatch
22 one's opponent than one's fist, and there was always the
23 chance of others joining in and making these affairs a free-
24 for-all. A fight at school might result in suspension or even

1 expulsion, but a boxing match, on the other hand, was a
2 welcomed sport. I went directly to Mickey and asked him to
3 teach me to box. He readily agreed, bless him. He met me on
4 the top floor of the Broverman Building. We put on the
5 gloves. He said I'd made a good decision in wanting to be a
6 fighter. It was truly, he said, a wise thing to do.

7 Q. How old were you at that time, sir?

8 A. About 15.

9 Q. And that was when you first decided that you should
10 get into boxing?

11 A. I actually decided it earlier. I'd been thinking
12 about it. I knew if I engaged in a street fight, I'd get
13 called to the principal's office, and, that's not going to
14 help you in any way, shape, or form.

15 Q. Especially for a valedictorian.

16 A. That's right. When I graduated from high school I
17 was given a nice award. I had a number of fights but always
18 wore gloves. I had a place to go to box and I'd invite these
19 guys up. I kept a list and, boy, I began to cross them off
20 one by one when old accounts were settled.

21 Q. So all the boys in school were invited to the boxing
22 room?

1 A. Not all. Only the bullies. One by one. I had a
2 lot of friends who were witnesses. A lot of the bullies
3 wouldn't fight. They backed off.

4 Q. Tell me about your training.

5 A. At my first lesson, Mickey took his handkerchief
6 from his pocket. He opened it, and placed it on the floor.
7 He put on boxing gloves. He stood on the handkerchief and he
8 said, "Now I want you to hit me." I said, "Where?" He said,
9 "Anywhere." I flailed away and he kept telling me to hit
10 harder. "Try harder." I did, but he blocked every blow or he
11 ducked away from it. I simply couldn't hit him. About 30
12 minutes of useless swinging and I asked for a time-out. He
13 had not moved off the handkerchief.

14 He explained to me that the first thing to remember was
15 that boxing was not a dangerous sport, because you were only
16 vulnerable when you were in the process of hitting your
17 opponent. One should strike only when he had a good shot at
18 the target. The target should be a vulnerable spot on his
19 opponent's body. It all seemed so simple. In addition to a
20 boxing ring surrounded by enough chairs for a good-sized
21 audience, the room contained training equipment. Punching
22 bags, a heavy body bag, an assortment of weights, jumping
23 ropes, et cetera; everything I needed was there. Mickey

1 obtained a key to the back door of the place for me and I was
2 in business.

3 I was determined to be a worthy opponent in the art of
4 fisticuffs. I hated to do it, but I gave up my nightly dates
5 with Amos and Andy and Lowell Thomas. Following the
6 completion of my paper route I'd go to the gym and work out,
7 usually alone. It took some time but eventually I could make
8 the speed bag sing, that is, beat a very fast tattoo. I even
9 reached the point where I gave exhibitions with the jumping
10 rope. In the process of learning to box, I acquired
11 confidence and self-reliance. I could never have accomplished
12 what I did without the inner assurance that I could succeed.

13 I started fighting in the ring at age 15. I fought in
14 the Golden Gloves program. I had my last bout in August 1941
15 in the final match of an Army tournament. At that time I was
16 22 years old. I continued to box for the next 3 years for
17 exercise, but then other sports caught my attention.
18 Altogether I participated in 29 formal boxing matches. This
19 includes the Golden Gloves program, college bouts, and Army
20 tournaments.

21 When I'd gained the confidence I needed I began to go
22 down my bully list and invite each one on the list to meet me
23 in the Broverman gym for a few rounds. I usually explained
24 that I didn't believe in street fighting because it led to

1 problems with the police, and certainly my church was against
2 it. As I mentioned earlier, I had several close friends who'd
3 come along to ensure that the match didn't become a brawl.
4 We'd fight for 3 minutes, rest for 1 minute, and then resume.
5 Only about half of those invited did accept my offer. The
6 others chickened out, but that satisfied me that the slate was
7 now clean. One of these fights got very brutal. I'd like to
8 explain it in more detail.

9 Q. Go ahead, sir.

10 A. An Irish fellow by the name of Colm Kelly Doughtery
11 lived in an adjoining community. He was about my age and
12 size. He never attended local schools as far as I knew, and
13 he had one of the more difficult jobs in the local coal mine.
14 Friends of mine had been telling me that Doughtery had been
15 running me down for some time. I thought this was strange
16 because I didn't even know the fellow; however, the reports
17 continued and it became so bad that I knew I had to take some
18 action. So, after church one Sunday morning, I went over to
19 the boarding house where Doughtery lived, and asked the lady
20 who ran the place to please tell Colm Kelly that I would like
21 to talk to him. He came out on the front porch accompanied by
22 half a dozen of his coal miner friends. I told him most of
23 what I'd heard, and suggested that we settle the matter
24 wearing boxing gloves in the high school gym. The coach had

1 given me the key, and I was free to work out there whenever I
2 liked. Dougherty readily accepted, and told me how he looked
3 forward to knocking me out. He thanked me for giving him the
4 opportunity. The time was set for 2:30 p.m. the following
5 Sunday.

6 My uncle, Ira Henemeyer, was visiting with us over that
7 weekend. We called him Uncle Heck. He was married to my
8 mother's younger sister, Gladys. Heck was a great kidder. I
9 told my father what had happened. He was all for it. He said
10 he'd like to referee. Uncle Heck thought this was the usual
11 friendly, workout type of boxing. He was in for a big
12 surprise

13 When we got to the gym, Dougherty and his group were
14 waiting at the door. His number of supporters had doubled,
15 and they were not friendly. We went to separate dressing
16 rooms and changed into our fighting togs. My dad went over a
17 few rules, the league-approved rules that he could remember
18 hearing the boxing announcer say, and the fight was on. It was
19 the most brutal one of my experience. We were both in good
20 shape. We weighed about 175 pounds. I don't remember how
21 many rounds we fought. It just kept going. I've never hit
22 anyone harder than I did that fellow. He started strong, but
23 eventually weakened. I'd knock him down, he would crash into
24 the wall or the floor, and eventually blood was on the wall

1 and smeared on the floor and, of course, on both of us. Very
2 little of it was mine. I did receive a bloody nose, but no
3 serious injuries. Finally, my opponent couldn't get up, and
4 my dad ended the fight as a technical knockout.

5 Dougherty was a long time getting cleaned up and dressed,
6 and when he finally came out he said that he didn't know why,
7 but he hated me from the first time he saw me, and he wanted
8 to whip me. I didn't feel any pity for him at all. He was
9 just another bully, and I told him if he continued to feel
10 that way to let me know and we'd have another go at it. He
11 nodded and said he'd keep it in mind, but I never heard from
12 him or of him again. I just hope that what he went through
13 served as a good lesson. Somehow I believe he was changed for
14 the better. However, I have lingering doubts.

15 Q. So you think you taught him a lesson, sir?

16 A. I think so. I was afraid I'd harmed this guy. You
17 know, permanently. It worried me. It was terrible. It was
18 like two guys trying to kill each other. The report at school
19 was that someone had fallen from the balcony to the gym floor
20 because all of the blood on the floor and walls.

21 Q. Yes, sir. But he kept coming back.

22 A. Oh, he had that Irish determination.

23 My first bout of any consequence was in 1935. I still
24 have the newspaper account of that fight. The reporter was a

1 young lady who had to fill in at the last minute. With regard
2 to my match she wrote, "I thought before the fight started
3 that if anyone started to have nose bleeds I'd faint. I guess
4 there's a little bit of savage in all of us. For that second
5 match"—(and that was mine)—she said, "For in that second
6 match—wasn't it good when the blood was pouring down that
7 lad's face? I forgot all about it. I was so excited and kept
8 on yelling for the winner."

9 Another clipping headed, "Kenny Crawford Wins," read as
10 follows: "The next round was between two lads of 150 pounds,
11 Jim Rankin of Chatham and Kenneth Crawford of Taylorville.
12 Rankin was off to a slight edge and he led off at the
13 beginning of the round. Crawford took a short time to find
14 the weakness in the Chatham lad's defense and had him on the
15 go when the bell sounded. In the second round Kenny chased
16 Rankin about the ring, agitating a bloody nose. The spectacle
17 was halted after a minute and 32 seconds as Crawford was
18 dealing out too much punishment for the game Rankin."

19 Jim Rankin and I became good friends and stayed in touch.
20 He finished college, attended St. Louis University Law School,
21 passed the Missouri bar, and set up a law practice in St.
22 Louis. He married. His wife gave birth to a baby boy, and it
23 appeared that Jim had a wonderful future. But, alas, 3 years

1 later he suffered a heart attack and died. It was a sad day
2 for me when I received news of his demise.

3 Sometime later, after I'd been on the Taylorville boxing
4 team for almost a year, Mickey told me he needed a favor.
5 "And what's that?" I asked. I knew before he answered that
6 I'd do whatever he wanted, since I held him in such high
7 regard. He said that he had lined up a boxing card in
8 Decatur. That meant that he had contracted for all or part of
9 the team members to fight. He was always careful to match us
10 with fellows of similar experience. He said that he was
11 programmed to fight a fellow called "Gorilla Jones." However,
12 Gorilla had been in an automobile accident, was severely
13 injured, and couldn't participate. Therefore, Mickey wanted
14 me to replace Gorilla.

15 As I said, I would do anything for Mickey but that did
16 not include fighting him. He was a professional who hit like
17 a mule and I was a rank amateur. He said the matches would be
18 held at the Decatur Country Club. They had agreed to pay top
19 money. He needed the money, so he needed my cooperation. I
20 agreed, but only if I was assured that I would survive. He
21 promised not to do any excessive bodily harm. He said, "We've
22 got to make it look good." He wanted me to be super
23 aggressive, to come after him flailing with all I had. Boxing

1 fans like a lot of action. A little blood doesn't hurt. I
2 agreed as long as it wasn't my blood.

3 We rehearsed the game plan several times, and since I
4 came through without any serious impairment I indicated I was
5 ready to go. We drove from Taylorville to Decatur, about 25
6 miles, in Mickey's Ford. Mickey and Mary, his redheaded,
7 quick-tempered wife, were in front while Leonard Moulin, Bill
8 Roberts, and I squeezed into the back. As we entered the
9 country club grounds I was surprised and impressed. People
10 looked like something from a Hollywood movie set. The boxing
11 ring was set up on a field of dark green, carefully clipped
12 grass. Tables and chairs were set up around the ring. Four
13 bars were set up at appropriate distances from the ring.
14 Everyone appeared to be drinking. Mickey and I were to fight
15 the feature match of a four-bout program. Leonard Moulin and
16 Carl Hodges fought the first match. Moulin won on a technical
17 knockout. Next, Jackie Sanders outpointed Red Edmond, and it
18 was time for the main match.

19 Mickey had a good-looking set of ring attire. He wore a
20 green robe with his name printed on the back in bold white
21 letters. He had a new pair of high-cut boxer's shoes. They
22 were green with white laces. He was moving around his corner
23 like a ballet dancer. Mickey had class. He also had a
24 deviated nasal septum which caused him to snort ominously. He

1 also looked menacing, threatening, and mean. I had on black
2 tennis shoes and dark trunks. I made a mental note that I'd
3 have to find a way to buy an outfit like Mickey's if I were to
4 continue this line of endeavor.

5 I had a white towel around my shoulders. My hands had
6 been taped. I slipped around a few men holding drinks and
7 smoking cigars. All of the men were in tuxedos and the ladies
8 wore evening gowns. As I crawled through the ropes a lady
9 called out, "My God, this kid doesn't have a second. A couple
10 of you guys get in there." It was funny. Two fellows, a
11 little unbalanced, rushed to my aid. One of them tried to get
12 me to drink from a water bottle while the other waved a towel
13 in an attempt to cool me off. I thanked them and explained
14 that that wasn't necessary now, but it would be nice later,
15 especially if I were a little worse from wear.

16 I noted that the judges were in position and the
17 timekeeper was playing with the lanyard on the bell. The
18 referee called us to the center of the ring holding a
19 microphone that could be heard for miles. He admonished us to
20 fight fair, no rabbit-punching, that means no hitting in the
21 back of the opponent's neck, no low blows, and no biting. He
22 concluded with, "And may the best man emerge victoriously." I
23 thought that was cool.

1 We went to our corners. The crowd yelled. We touched
2 gloves, and the fight was on. I threw everything I had at
3 Mickey. He was snorting like a mad bull. "What an actor," I
4 thought. About this time he caught me with a good one on the
5 chin. I saw stars and started to slide to the canvas. I
6 grabbed for him and he grabbed for me like a long lost
7 brother. I whispered, "Mick, another one like that and it's
8 all over." He kept saying, "Okay, okay. Are you all right?"
9 By that time I could manage alone. We shoved each other, and
10 resumed throwing punches. I had a nosebleed. The blood ran
11 down my chest and shortly it was smeared all over my torso.
12 The crowd, sensing a knockout, went wild. For such nice-
13 looking people, the yelling seemed out of character. My
14 seconds worked on me feverishly. They cleaned me up, wiped me
15 off, cooled me off, tried to force water down my throat, and
16 seemed nonplussed when I spat it out. Somehow I'd gained
17 another attendant. Instead of two seconds I had three. They
18 stumbled over each other like Curly, Moe, and Larry.

19 The second round was much like the first, lots of action.
20 Fortunately, we both were in excellent shape. At the
21 beginning of the third round Mick signaled that I should use
22 my right hand more. That was true. I was throwing left-hand
23 punches frequently. I kept my right hand close to my face for
24 protection. A two-handed puncher is wide open, and I had no

1 desire to be stretched out on the canvas. I fought the fourth
2 and last round with care. All I wanted now was to get it
3 over. It had gone well. I didn't hear anyone boo us. I'd
4 done my part for good old Mickey, including bleeding, and I
5 hoped he'd be pleased with me. With a little more practice I
6 thought we might develop a real show for the city folks.

7 Q. Sir, you mentioned seconds. What were seconds?

8 A. You've seen in the movies—you've seen fight scenes.
9 Here's the fighter in the ring. There's a couple of guys
10 standing there with a towel—

11 Q. The corner men?

12 A. The corner men. Yes, those are "seconds."

13 When the final bell sounded, Mickey and I hugged each
14 other to show what good sports we were, and the crowd
15 responded. The referee conferred with the judges, collected
16 some slips of paper, studied them, and then turned toward my
17 corner. I almost fainted. I wanted Mickey to win. He had
18 laid off when I asked him. I didn't deserve to win. I said
19 to myself, "Give it to Mick. Please give it to Mickey," but
20 he didn't. He smiled. He raised my right hand. The crowd
21 broke into cheers. I looked at Mick. He looked rather glum
22 and left the ring. As soon as I could I left the ring, got
23 dressed, and went looking for Mick to tell him how sorry I
24 was. Somehow I felt guilty. I found the group in the car

1 waiting for me. Mary was furious. She stormed at Mick all
2 the way home. I told her it was all my fault. I apologized,
3 but I didn't really think I'd done anything wrong. Mick gave
4 each of us \$25, a lot of money for Depression times, but he
5 never mentioned the fight again, and we remained friends,
6 thank goodness.

7 The next day an account of the bout was in the Decatur
8 newspaper. It read in part, "McMahan Defeated by Crawford on
9 Sunnyvale Card. Ken Crawford, a newcomer from Taylorville,
10 outpointed Mickey McMahan, former Decatur battler and now from
11 Taylorville, in the feature match of a four-bout amateur
12 boxing program at Sunnyvale Country Club last night. Fighting
13 at 147 pounds, the boys went three fast rounds with Crawford
14 gaining the shade, mainly because of a good left hand which
15 did considerable damage. McMahan forced the fighting most of
16 the way." I finally surmised that the defeat was a hard pill
17 for both of them to swallow because they had been Decatur
18 residents for some time and obviously knew a lot of people
19 there.

20 Those were some of my more noteworthy fights I just
21 singled those out. The rest of the 29—well, there's a story
22 to every one of them.

23 Q. Did you ever fight Mickey again, sir?

1 A. No. It would have been his call, but he never
2 needed me. I couldn't have handled him my best day ever. Did
3 you ever hear of Billy Conn? He fought Joe Louis and got
4 knocked out by Joe.

5 Q. Joe knocked out many people.

6 A. That's right. But Conn was winning the fight.

7 Q. Really.

8 A. He'd won 10 out of 12 rounds at this time, and then
9 he got cute. He started to think that he was going to knock
10 Joe out.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. So as I say, once you try to pour it on the other
13 guy you're leaving yourself wide open. Well, all you had to
14 do with Louis was just leave yourself open a little bit, and
15 his 6-inch punch could be pretty powerful. He knocked old
16 Billy stone cold. Billy told me all that himself.

17 Q. What other sports did you play? Did you ever play
18 football?

19 A. Yes indeed. I played football my first year in
20 college and some in high school, but it looked like I might be
21 headed for a professional baseball career and I didn't want to
22 hurt myself. As a catcher, your arm is so important, and a
23 shoulder injury could have ended my aspirations.

1 Another thing, I had to work after high school classes.
2 It was the same thing in college. I liked those other sports,
3 but I concentrated on boxing. Boxing was great because you
4 can do it anytime. You can train at night. You can train at
5 3 a.m. in the morning if you want to.

6 Q. Let me ask you: Of those two sports, boxing and
7 baseball, which one did you prefer?

8 A. Boxing.

9 Q. And what reason, sir?

10 A. I liked boxing so much because once I'd started
11 knocking off these bullies I gained confidence. I knew what I
12 could do. I didn't have to take crap from anybody. There
13 were times when I exhibited that. However, I was careful. I
14 stayed out of trouble.

15 Q. Would you say that boxing taught you something about
16 yourself?

17 A. Yes. It taught me to have confidence in myself. I
18 developed a hard punch. I finally acquired a body bag,
19 punching bags, speed bags, and I kept them in our garage at
20 home. It was an old barn, but there was one part of it that
21 was a single room. I took that and made it into a small gym
22 with weights and exercise aids. I'd get up at 5 in the
23 morning and go out and just hit the large body bag, and, in
24 time one can build up all kinds of power.

1 Let me give you an example of why I am so fond of the
2 sport. Shortly after I was recalled to the Army in 1946 my
3 wife and I drove to Ft. Lewis, Washington, my new duty
4 station. We stopped in Boody, Illinois, to visit with my
5 parents. They had a restaurant called "The Green Gables." It
6 was a nice place. The restaurant had been closed at 9 p.m.
7 It was now 11 p.m. A knock on the front door was heard. My
8 Dad went to the door to explain the place was closed. The
9 fellow who knocked had four men with him. Two were Navy men,
10 enlisted men in uniform. The other two were civilians. He
11 told my Dad, "I don't care if you are closed, old man. Get
12 yourself in there and fix us something to eat." I ran to the
13 front door, and hit this fellow flush on the chin. The others
14 started to intervene. I told the Navy men that they were
15 asking for a court-martial. They backed off. By the way, I
16 was in uniform. I told the civilians the Sherriff would take
17 care of them. They backed down. I then proceeded to slap the
18 leader around until he pleaded for me to stop. It was no
19 problem at all. Isn't it nice to be able to do that? Do you
20 see why I love the sport?

21 Q. Were there any repercussions with the law?

22 A. No. We didn't report it. Madge and I were due to
23 leave. The next morning, and I did not want to delay that.
24 Also, I didn't want the military authorities to know about it.

1 I was innocent of any wrongdoing, but I did not want to set
2 off an investigation. The culprit came up from Blue Mound,
3 Illinois, about 15 minutes from my Dad's place, the next day
4 and apologized profusely. The fellows were celebrating my
5 opponent's promotion to the position of manager of a chain
6 store. They had been drinking too much.

7 Q. So the affair had a happy ending.

8 A. Not really. Madge was on my case all the way to
9 Fort Lewis. She said I should have knocked the guy out. She
10 said that is what he deserved. The "invasion" upset and
11 scared her.

12 Q. What would you say was the biggest highlight of your
13 athletic career?

14 A. There were so many it is hard to choose. I suppose
15 the fight I had at Fort Bragg with Jack Dempsey refereeing it.
16 We had thousands who'd come to see it. The fight was in an
17 outdoor arena. I heard that the military population of the
18 base exceeded 100,000 troops at that time. I lost that fight
19 although I shouldn't have—I lost it through stupidity.

20 Q. Did you get any pointers from Dempsey?

21 A. Not in boxing. But he impressed by the way he
22 handled himself, how he treated people.

23 Q. Tell me more about your life at Fort Bragg, sir.

1 A. I thought at the time—August 1941—that I would be
2 in the service no more than a year. I did not take it
3 seriously at first. I didn't think I'd soldier at all. I
4 played on the baseball , and made the boxing team with no
5 difficulty. That was the way I intended to get through that
6 year. I thought it was "Goodbye, dear. I'll be back in a
7 year." Many of us thought so; just go in a year; get basic
8 training; go home. It didn't work out that way, of course,
9 but I didn't see any reason to learn to soldier at that point;
10 sounds stupid, I admit. I wound up in this tournament, and
11 went to the finals. I hadn't lost a fight to date. I had so
12 much confidence, I didn't care who it was I fought. Joe
13 Louis? Fine, bring him on. I learned that I would fight Joel
14 Leffingwell from Detroit. That was OK with me.

15 Several things happened. First of all, we were to
16 perform in an outdoor boxing ring. Dressing rooms were built
17 on either side of the ring. The heavyweights were to stand by
18 for Dempsey. We would fight when he arrived.

19 A buddy of mine, a middleweight, was scheduled to fight.
20 It was time to go out and he discovered that his pants were
21 torn. He asked, "Lend me your trunks." Well, what could I
22 do? The guy couldn't go fight without them. I took mine off
23 and I'm waiting in the dressing room. My friend gets
24 clobbered—knocked out. About this time this limo drives up

1 and Dempsey gets out. I got a signal, "Come on out, we're
2 about ready." I said, "No, I can't. Joe has my trunks."
3 He's out cold, so someone's got to get my pants off him and
4 give them to me. In the meantime, there were a lot of funny
5 remarks—you know how GI humor is.

6 Q. Yes, sir.

7 A. Leffingwell was in the ring prancing around; someone
8 yelled, "Where'd the other guy go?", people asked. The crowd
9 was enamored by Dempsey—he spoke to them on the mike and did
10 very well. The crowd started to chant, "Where's Crawford?"
11 It was very embarrassing.

12 When I got out, I was rather upset.

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. My second, he's in that picture, said, "You better
15 get your mind on what you're doing." I said, "Aw, I can take
16 that guy with the back of my hand." I was overconfident.
17 Then Dempsey calls us out, gives us the usual instructions.

18 My friends told me about this. The timekeeper is set to
19 pull a rope that would sound the bell to start the bout. My
20 opponent is watching him closely. When he pulls it—as he
21 started to pull it—Leffingwell is out of his corner. He is
22 coming at me very fast, and I've got my hands down. He
23 bounces one off my forehead. I saw it coming, and I ducked—
24 leaned forward at the waist. His punch bounced right off of

1 my head and I sank to my knees. The next thing I remember
2 Dempsey is saying, "Six, seven" So I said to myself,
3 "Biggest crowd I've ever experienced, Dempsey is here, and
4 I've pulled a stunt like this."

5 Q. Yes, sir.

6 A. I knew that old trick. I'd never done that, but
7 anyway—it's wrong. I went after him—I saw a motion picture
8 later—like a cat after a mouse. I think I won it. Dempsey
9 told the regimental commander that since I had gone down for
10 so much of the count that was just too many points. But
11 Dempsey did say that I was the best fighter, and that I was in
12 the best shape and so forth. Then the regimental commander
13 wanted a rematch.

14 Q. What did Leffingwell think about the rematch?

15 A. He didn't want to do it, but he could have been
16 forced to do it. But then I got orders to Field Artillery
17 Officer Candidate School, so we never fought the second time.
18 Then, I became an officer and that changed things. No more
19 boxing matches with enlisted men.

20 Q. Did you continue boxing?

21 A. Only for exercise, but for a while I did this on a
22 regular basis. There was always an NCO on hand who would be
23 my sparring partner.

1 Q. At this point, you were still boxing a little, and
2 playing baseball. Is that correct?

3 A. No. Much earlier, I faced reality. I realized that
4 I wasn't blessed with the ability to make it in the majors.
5 Let me tell you one thing that happened that really made me
6 think. The best baseball player that Taylorville ever
7 produced was a fellow named Frank Lemanski. We called him
8 "Lefty;" he was a left-handed pitcher. He also was a super
9 athlete, and he was an all-around super guy.

10 I had become the regular catcher for the Peabody Coal
11 Company team, and I had the pleasure of working with Lefty
12 when he came home after the season ended. He was just
13 absolutely superb. And not only was he a superb pitcher, he
14 could hit, he was fast and when he ran, little puffs of dust
15 formed behind him. He was the only one I have ever seen do
16 that. I first caught Lefty in the fall of 1935. He was the
17 property of Brooklyn. Most of the time he worked as a relief
18 pitcher, but he had the distinction of striking out Babe Ruth
19 with his first three pitches. I asked him whether he would
20 stay in Taylorville over the winter. He said that he and his
21 wife would like nothing better, but he'd have to find
22 employment. As it turned out, he couldn't find an off-season
23 job.

1 The newspaper account of a game against the Lincoln State
2 School of the Deaf—one of the games in which I caught Lefty—
3 read in part: "Lefty held the Lincoln boys to five scattered
4 blows and struck out ten men. Kenneth Crawford, local
5 youngster, did a splendid job of receiving." I should note
6 that I didn't get any hits that day.

7 Lefty's remark that he and his wife would stay in
8 Taylorville over the winter if he could find employment made a
9 big impression on me. If a player could make it to the major
10 leagues, why did he have to find another job to tide him and
11 his family over during the winter? I thought that was so
12 unfair. The salaries of that time were minimal compared to
13 today's competition because of TV and other things. I still
14 wanted to be a major leaguer, but I began to see the realities
15 of such a profession. There were also other things that made
16 me think that I didn't want to do this. I didn't want to try
17 to make a living out of it. It's just too uncertain. You can
18 be released at any time. You're out of a job, and yet you can
19 be the nicest guy in the world and the hardest working. But
20 that wouldn't make any difference.

21 So I began to disfavor thoughts of any professional
22 athletic career, because you've got to be so good. The people
23 that I've known who have succeeded have told me it hasn't been
24 all ice cream and cake for them either. I decided that I

1 would be satisfied as an amateur—and that I would get all the
2 education possible, and then see what happens.

3 Jack Glasgow was a year or two older than I, and the son
4 of John Glasgow, who was a super big wheel in coal-mining
5 circles. Upon graduation from high school Jack went to some
6 sort of prep school and ended up in the United States Naval
7 Academy in Annapolis, Maryland. I saw him a few times when he
8 came home on leave. Also, I heard of the United States
9 Military Academy in New York, and then a movie named
10 "Flirtation Walk," starring Dick Powell and Ruby Keeler, came
11 out. Since I had had a crush on Ruby for a long time, the
12 film made a big impression. I learned that both academies had
13 boxing and baseball teams and I liked the idea of engaging in
14 these sports on that level. I also heard of an Illinois boy
15 from Oswego, Illinois, who entered the Naval Academy in 1931,
16 and that year as a plebe won the intercollegiate heavyweight
17 boxing championship. He duplicated this feat for the next
18 three years. He also played on the football team, and in 1935
19 he booted a field goal to beat the Army team. Slade Cutter,
20 right then and there, became one of my heroes, and we would,
21 years later, become good friends.

22 I learned that in order to attend one of the U.S.
23 academies one must have an appointment from a U.S.
24 representative or a senator. I talked to my father about it,

1 but he didn't show any interest in the idea. I decided to try
2 to obtain an appointment on my own. I went to the
3 Springfield, Illinois office of Congressman Harry H. Mason, a
4 kindly, elderly gentleman who treated me very well. He told
5 me that Jack Glasgow had failed his first year at the academy
6 and had been reappointed as the principal candidate for the
7 class of '37, but he told me to give him a week or two to
8 ascertain my qualifications and he'd let me know. He told me
9 that the only vacancy that he had was that of the third
10 alternate to the Naval Academy.

11 In early October I received a letter dated October 8,
12 1936, from Representative Mason informing me that he had
13 designated me as third alternate for appointment as a
14 midshipman in the Naval Academy in Annapolis; however, as
15 expected, Jack sailed through the examination and was
16 reappointed. However, I felt a sense of accomplishment for
17 giving it a try. I realized that if one wanted to reach his
18 goals he had to get off his duff and go for it.

19 Q. This brings us up to your senior year in high
20 school. What do you recall of those days?

21 A. I graduated from high school in Taylorville,
22 Illinois, in late May 1936. Commencement exercises were held
23 at the Manners Park Auditorium. We had 153 graduates and an
24 exceedingly large crowd of friends and relatives. Reverend

1 Robert N. McDowell, pastor of a large church in Champaign,
2 Illinois, delivered an outstanding address entitled, "The
3 Three Forces of Life." Harry May was our valedictorian and
4 made a splendid presentation. Laurabelle Fisher was honored
5 as the outstanding female student of our class, and I was
6 chosen as the outstanding male student. Laurabelle was
7 someone who we all expected to make something of herself. She
8 had it all; talent, looks, and a sharp mind. Some years later
9 at a class reunion I asked Laurabelle how everything went and
10 how she was doing. She looked a little exasperated and said,
11 "What am I doing? The usual thing. I'm raising kids."

12 We were presented with glowing certificates, our virtues
13 were extolled, and I also received a charming brass medal
14 three inches in diameter. On the front side were a World War
15 I soldier and sailor with bayonets at the ready as depicted in
16 bold relief. "For God and Country" stands out around the top
17 while "Semper Fidelis" is at the bottom. On the reverse side
18 is the American eagle with wings spread. "American Legion
19 School Award" adorns the middle of the medal with the words,
20 "Courage, Honor, Service, Leadership, and Scholarship"
21 following. I have it in the center of a nice shadowbox, a
22 gift from my beloved wife, Madge, and it is as inspiring today
23 as it was when I received it.

1 Q. Did you see any improvement in the country's economy
2 at this time?

3 A. Not really. I remember in 1935, and '36 the price of
4 some of the common items that we bought at the time. A Ford
5 V8 coupe was \$495 dollars; a three-piece living room set, \$88;
6 Sanka coffee was \$.46 cents a pound; butter was \$.40 cents a
7 pound; toilet paper, seven rolls for \$.25 cents; ground wheat,
8 two pounds for a \$.25; Crisco, \$.20 cents a pound; Campbell's
9 tomato soup, \$.20 cents for three cans; gasoline was \$.19
10 cents a gallon; Ivory soap was \$.17 for two large bars; and
11 first-class postage was three cents. Now, this sounds
12 wonderful, but keep in mind the average annual income at the
13 time was \$1,115. In Europe, German leader Adolf Hitler
14 violated the peace treaty that ended World War I by
15 reintroducing the draft and taking other actions to build his
16 country's might. In Africa, Italy had invaded Ethiopia and
17 the Middle East. Shah Reza Khan Pahlavi renamed Persia Iran.
18 The Great Depression continued its grip across the United
19 States and millions remained out of work. Franklin Roosevelt
20 expanded the New Deal programs to help the country recover.
21 My dad's idol, John L. Lewis, president of the United Mine
22 Workers, began a campaign to organize mass production workers
23 within the framework of the American Federation of Labor. On
24 the science front, work continued on the development of radar.

1 Now that I was a high school graduate it was time to move
2 on to amount to something. In the huge Peabody Coal Mine
3 system there was an understanding that if one's father was
4 employed with the company, his son could be hired if he were
5 18 years of age or older and in good health. The health
6 requirement meant to be able to do very strenuous labor. I
7 applied for a job even though I'd not be 18 until the last day
8 of October. The age requirement was waived, I've always
9 believed, because I played on the company baseball team.

10 As I expected, I was assigned to work in the tipple.

11 The word "tipple" has two meanings. The first means to
12 drink alcoholic beverages to excess, or habitually. It also
13 means, "an apparatus for unloading freight cars by tipping
14 them, or the place where it was done." As the coal was
15 removed, down below it was loaded into small, wheeled
16 containers which were placed on the cage—that's an elevator.
17 It was hoisted up the shaft and to the tipple where the cars
18 were tipped and the contents—coal, dirt, debris, and rock—
19 emptied on the endless steel belts. The moving belts would
20 deposit the contents into railroad cars parked on the ground
21 level. The "band pickers," as the crews were called, walked
22 the belts picking out rocks and other foreign objects. These
23 were thrown into the aisles between the tables where it was
24 scraped into other railroad cars. There the waste went to

1 landfills. This process allowed coal to come out relatively
2 clean.

3 It was hard work. The wages were fair and much more than
4 one could earn on a normal routine job. I realized that if I
5 thought of this as a chain gang or prison and felt sorry for
6 myself, it'd be a disaster. One's attitude was the key. I
7 knew every time I breathed I was inhaling coal dust. I knew a
8 slip on the table could lead to serious injuries. I simply
9 refused to harbor such negative thoughts. I thought of the
10 Kingfish who counseled Andy "it all depends on how you look at
11 it." I decided to be careful about reacting in a negative way
12 and instead developed new habits of perspective.

13 I thought to myself, "What is it that I could get out of
14 my work situation that could be of benefit?" It finally
15 dawned on me that this could be a place where I could really
16 work out and build some muscles. I would look at the place as
17 a gym. I'd been taking the Charles Atlas course to build up
18 my physique but with unsatisfactory results. I set up a
19 routine that produced amazing results. I would consider the
20 rocks that had to be discarded as weights (they were). I
21 would pick them up, lift them chest high, and then throw them
22 into the aisles. Frequently, the tables stopped to allow a
23 full car below to be replaced. When this happened I'd grip
24 one of the overhead beams and do chin ups. Actually, I

1 developed a very fine exercise routine. My buddies thought
2 I'd lost my marbles, of course. I knew that such a regime is
3 bound to work. The old principle of "use it or lose it."

4 One of my old high school classmates, Everett Adams,
5 whose father worked for the Wabash Railroad, was a fine
6 fellow. Everett's mother was the salt of the earth, also.
7 Everett called me one day and stated that his dad had four
8 railroad family passes to Los Angeles and the family planned a
9 West Coast vacation. Don, his older brother, was unable to
10 go, and I could take his place if I so desired. I jumped at
11 the chance. There was no problem insofar as my job was
12 concerned. If one failed to come to work, he simply was not
13 paid; however, I did explain the situation to my boss, Charlie
14 Stillson, and about a week later, we boarded the train.
15 Another great adventure was about to begin.

16 It was early July, 1936, and I was extremely excited to
17 make this trip. I'd never been west of Quincy, Illinois, and
18 had always been a fan of the Wild West. I could name all the
19 cowboy movie stars. To this day, I find myself drawn to the
20 TV programs that cater to that phase of our history. I also
21 had a crush on a pretty little star by the name of Jean
22 Parker. Hopefully, I might meet her. I was great for having
23 crushes on famous actresses.

24 Q. Seems like a common theme, sir.

1 A. It is. Part of the growing-up process. On the last
2 night of our trip the train stopped at Needles, California.
3 We got off the train. It was like stepping into an oven.
4 Someone told me the temperature was 115 degrees. The trip
5 lasted 4 days and we didn't have sleeping accommodations. I
6 was so taken with the idea of seeing the wild and wooly West
7 that I didn't mind. Although keeping clean was a bit of a
8 problem, we managed okay.

9 We were met by a young, lovely couple, Mr. and Mrs.
10 Howard Oliver. Betty Oliver was Mr. Adams's niece. Howard
11 was a blue-collar worker, very pleasant, and impossible not to
12 like. The Oliver home was small, but we managed beautifully.
13 Everett and I slept on the back porch under mosquito netting.

14 Actually we didn't sleep all that much. A little over
15 three miles out in the Pacific Ocean several gambling ships
16 were anchored, and every night Everett wanted to go to one of
17 them. All we had to do was get to the dock. I don't gamble,
18 not that I have anything against it, except that in the long
19 run the patron's going to lose. But I enjoyed the glamour of
20 the well-dressed people and the excitement that pervaded these
21 fun-loving folks.

22 We managed to get to Monument Valley, where Westerns were
23 made. I thought it was one of the most scenic places I'd ever
24 seen. We went out to Hollywood where the name is emblazoned

1 on huge white block letters on a hill. I didn't realize it
2 then, but I would visit that city many times in the future.

3 The trip home was uneventful. I did a lot of reading and
4 thinking. California seemed to be the land of opportunity. I
5 wondered whether I should return and try to find a career in
6 the West or just stay home and see what developed. I resumed
7 working at the mine, playing with the Peabody Miners, and
8 occasionally fighting whenever Mickey could arrange a program.
9 Not a bad life for one who's 18, in good shape, and feeling
10 super all the time.

11 Toward the end of the summer, 1936, I learned that the
12 St. Louis Cardinals organization was holding tryouts at
13 Sportsman's Park in St. Louis. I decided to see if I could
14 make the grade into organized baseball. At the appointed time
15 I reported to that big baseball field. I'd been there before.
16 I'd seen three or four Cardinal games, and sat enthralled
17 through each one. I stayed with my Aunt Cora and Uncle Bill
18 Letter, two grand people. I was always welcome. They lived
19 in a nice place on Chippewa Street in St. Louis. Uncle Bill
20 made neon signs, and I'd watch him bend tubing and work
21 wonders with anything made of glass.

22 At the ballpark the ball players were segregated by
23 positions. I lined up with a dozen or so catchers and we
24 would run races and catch numerous pitchers while other

1 players were hitting, and throw the ball to all the bases as
2 directed by the coaches. I did the best that I could. When
3 the trials were over we were counseled. I was told that I'd
4 done quite well and would be hearing from the Cardinal's
5 office. I returned home, and the next day resumed my normal
6 routine.

7 We'd been living at 310 South Main Street in Taylorville.
8 Very close to us was Manners Park. Jim and I enjoyed the
9 facilities. I spent most of my leisure time at the baseball
10 field. Jim loved the swimming pool in spite of dire warnings
11 about the risk of contracting polio. The Salk vaccine was not
12 yet available, and we all lived in fear of that dreaded
13 disease. My mother decided that we should stop paying rent
14 and buy a place of our own. The trouble was that until now
15 the money was not available; however, with my pay check added
16 to the family finances, such a move was possible. Another
17 factor, although I doubt whether anyone considered it, was
18 that house prices were probably at the lowest they would ever
19 be.

20 Mother selected a home on East Park Street, made the down
21 payment, and we moved in. I was off work and helped, but my
22 dad, who had no time off, left the house on South Main and
23 came home to the new place on East Park.

1 The property consisted of a small barn, a large lot, and
2 a two-story house. Upstairs there were two bedrooms, no bath.
3 Downstairs were a living room, dining room, master bedroom,
4 bathroom, and a very large kitchen. We had a coal-burning
5 furnace but no basement. Consequently, my father and I dug
6 out a basement, or a partial basement, and cemented it. The
7 cost of the property was \$1800.

8 Q. Not a bad deal, sir.

9 A. No. It's actually still there. The barn was
10 divided into a garage and a relatively small room where I set
11 up my one-man gymnasium, as I mentioned earlier, I had weights
12 and a heavy bag, plus a speed punching bag. I spent many
13 hours working with that equipment.

14 As September approached, those in my class who were
15 fortunate enough to be able to go on to college were preparing
16 to depart. I felt depressed and saddened that I could not be
17 one of them. Two or three nights each week, I'd go to our
18 city library (which was a good one) and study. I wanted to
19 work out courses of study that might duplicate what I would
20 find in college. I was determined to eventually leave
21 Taylorville to pursue higher education. I'd been offered
22 about a dozen scholarships to various institutions of higher
23 learning when I graduated from high school. I presumed that
24 my selection as the best all-around male student accounted for

1 that. One of those was Illinois College, which is located in
2 Jacksonville, about 60 miles northwest of Taylorville.

3 A few months later I received a letter from Al Eckert,
4 president of the Springfield, Missouri, baseball club. The
5 letter read as follows: "Please find a contract for the '37
6 season. Sign same where the 'X' is marked, and your parents
7 will sign where the word 'Witnesses' is. Return contract and
8 the enclosed information slip to this office. You'll be
9 notified next spring the dates you are to report to training
10 camp." Branch Rickey was listed as vice president of the
11 organization. He was destined to become one of the truly
12 greatest men in baseball.

13 The winter months in '36 and '37 were especially cold.
14 Jimmy lacked an adequate jacket. We finally got one for him,
15 and I was greatly relieved. I had managed to save nearly 6
16 dollars and told Jimmy we should buy Christmas gifts for the
17 family. He was all for it. The first thing that we purchased
18 was a waffle iron for my mother. We both loved waffles and we
19 would eat them until my mother called a halt. I think we got
20 a tie for my dad. I bought a hunting knife for Jimmy, but I
21 wouldn't let him see it until Christmas. He was delighted
22 with it. Joan was no problem; a small toy would suffice for
23 her.

1 Ruth was the problem. She was only 10 years old and not
2 only were we about out of money, but we had no idea what she
3 would like. We decided on earrings. The 5 and 10 had a big
4 array within our price range, and I'll never forget my great
5 little brother saying on our way home "Gee, Kenny. Shopping
6 is fun, especially if you have money."

7 I don't know what happened, but when Ruth opened her
8 package on Christmas morning she found that one earring was
9 white and the other was black. We probably would have thought
10 that was fashionable if we'd been asked. Ruth began to cry.
11 I felt terrible. She still mentions that faux pas to me on
12 occasion.

13 I began hanging out more with three of my former high
14 school classmates. They were truly nice people and a joy to
15 know. One was Louise Moulen, who was of French extraction;
16 black hair, black eyes, lovely disposition. Gail Sanders,
17 pretty; highly introspective; very intelligent. The fourth
18 member of the foursome was Gerald Sessions. He always wore a
19 smile and reminded me of the actor Red Buttons. Gerald, when
20 I last heard from him, lived in Washington State, had been
21 employed as a bakery truck driver for over 30 years and had
22 never had an accident, which was his claim to fame.

23 Louise was a telephone operator. We had to place our
24 calls with the operator, who would then dial the number. I

1 also dated a little dreamboat named Vida Seaman. When Louise
2 was on duty and I'd call Vida, Louise was, naturally, frosty.
3 We pal'd around together for 2 years, '36, '37. In '38 I left
4 home for college. Louise enrolled in nursing school. Gerald
5 moved to the West Coast, and I never knew what became of Gail.
6 Bless them, they were wonderful friends.

7 I envied those classmates who'd enrolled in college. I
8 imagined them getting well educated, while I did not. I also
9 knew I couldn't wait too long or it would be too late. Louise
10 had hinted at marriage and raising beautiful bambinos. A few
11 of my classmates were already doing just that. I shuddered at
12 the thought. It would mean that I would spend the rest of my
13 life as a coal miner. I decided to do a home-study course on
14 my own. I selected psychology because I heard some older
15 college students discussing it. I looked at what we had in
16 our city library and was very impressed.

17 A few weeks later Mr. Baughman, our city librarian,
18 called my father and told him he'd like to see him. My dad
19 told me later that Mr. Baughman looked rather worried and
20 said, "Charlie, I'm worried about Kenneth. He's been asking
21 for books that nobody reads." Mr. Baughman must have thought
22 that I was some sort of a loony.

23 In March '37, I received instructions from the Cardinals
24 baseball organization to report to the spring training

1 facility in Springfield, Missouri. I was very excited about
2 that venture, and took a bus to Springfield, thinking about
3 baseball for most of the trip. I arrived ready and eager to
4 go. I'd been told to check in at Mrs. Randall's boarding
5 house on Main Street. Mrs. Randall's daughter, Susie, met me
6 at the door. She didn't seem to be at all friendly. She was
7 about 16 or so. I was told that her mother had warned her to
8 be careful when she was around all these young ballplayers.
9 "They couldn't be trusted," she said. Five other fellows
10 resided there. We had all of our meals together.

11 I enjoyed them all. There was a lot of banter, kidding
12 around, and companionship. I noticed that Susie watched me
13 quite a bit. I don't know why, but I expect she was checking
14 to see that I didn't eat more than two slices of bread and jam
15 at dinner. I was constantly hungry

16 For several days it was baseball, baseball, baseball. We
17 ran races around the bases and the outfield, I caught many
18 pitchers for hours and hours, and I threw runners out at
19 second base countless times. Much of the time Branch Rickey
20 was behind me taking notes and shouting instructions. He was
21 a very impressive man, without doubt, very much in charge.

22 This seemed to be an unusual place to have a life-
23 changing experience, but I did. I don't mean at the ballpark
24 but at a Christian revival meeting that was being held in

1 Springfield. For a long time I had felt that the time had
2 come for me to be "born again." The third chapter of John was
3 engraved in my mind, and many times I recalled our Savior and
4 Lord's admonition, "I tell you the truth: no one can see the
5 Kingdom of God unless he is born again." I had felt the
6 urging of the Holy Spirit for some time but could not bring
7 myself to do it before my friends at home. I don't know why,
8 shyness, perhaps; false modesty, maybe. I didn't have that
9 excuse now. Each evening I'd dress up and leave shortly after
10 dinner. My friends became curious of what I was up to. "Does
11 she have a friend or two?" was the usual remark.

12 The third night of attendance I went to the altar, knelt,
13 and prayed. No question that the Holy Spirit was within me.
14 I could feel His presence. I prayed, "Lord, I want to be
15 saved and I'll remain right here on my knees all night if that
16 is what it takes, but I want to know without doubt that I've
17 been born again." At that instant a wave of relief and joy
18 swept through me. It left no doubt as to what had happened.
19 I thought, "I've got to get myself a Bible and study it."

20 Three young men came up and congratulated me. One handed
21 me a Bible, which I noted was well marked, and along the side
22 were the words "Where will you spend eternity?" Inside I
23 noticed a lot of handwritten notations. I told him I couldn't
24 take it because obviously it was very personal to him. He

1 said, "You will have to take it. I've been told to give it to
2 you." I treasured it for many years, and this, of course, was
3 and is the most consequential thing that ever happened to me.
4 I know where I'll spend eternity.

5 Q. And to think this all came about because of a dream
6 to play pro baseball, sir?

7 A. No. Baseball had nothing to do with it. I wanted
8 to give myself to the Lord but couldn't bring myself to do it
9 at home. Too shy, perhaps. Maybe I thought I wasn't good
10 enough and people at home knew it.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. I imagined some were saying, "What's he doing? He's
13 not good enough." Truthfully, I doubt now that people were
14 giving me a second thought. Once I was there, I knew I had to
15 do it. I wanted to get it done. It was a golden opportunity,
16 so I took it.

17 Q. How was spring ball going for you at that time?

18 A. Oh, fine—well, all right except it was highly
19 competitive. These guys were good. One day Branch Rickey
20 took me aside and told me he wanted me to go to St. Louis and
21 be tutored briefly by Mike Gonzales. I'd heard of him. He
22 was a Cuban catcher who'd been in the Cardinals system a long
23 time and was now a coach for the St. Louis Cardinals. Rickey
24 gave me a note addressed to Frankie Frisch, manager of the

1 Cardinals. He told me to take a bus to St. Louis that night.
2 I packed my few belongings, and left for the big city. I had
3 no idea what the future held, but whatever it was, I was
4 confident everything would work out for the best. I went to
5 Sportsman's Park the next morning about 9:30. I found Mr.
6 Frisch. He read the note and said three words: "Get a
7 uniform."

8 I went through the dugout to the locker rooms, found a
9 fellow in charge of the equipment. He gave me a uniform that
10 fit well, a jacket, and everything else I needed.

11 The first fellow that spoke to me was Leo Durocher, who
12 played shortstop and was also team captain. He ranked next to
13 Frisch. I called him Mr. Durocher, but he told me that his
14 name was Leo. He said, "Let's warm up." I got a ball and we
15 threw it back and forth for about 15 minutes. Leo looked a
16 little old to me to be still playing. He was born on July 27,
17 1905. He was 31. He'd be 32 in about three months. Frankie
18 Frisch was born September 9, 1898. He was 38; to me that was
19 ancient.

20 Batting practice was starting. Leo told me to get behind
21 the plate. I donned the appropriate protective equipment and
22 for the next hour or so I caught batting practice. I was glad
23 to see the opposing team, the New York Giants, arrive and take
24 over the field for their practice session. The fans were

1 arriving. The box seats were filling up, and there was one
2 very attractive lady, who caught my eye. She was very
3 stylish, and had a little girl with her who looked like
4 Shirley Temple. Mickey Owen, who was standing nearby, said,
5 "Know who that is?" I said, "No, but she's sure good-
6 looking." Mickey replied, "That's Loraine Day, the actress."
7 He went on, "We all watch ourselves because she's Durocher's
8 wife, and he gets a little jealous." I noticed that when Leo
9 would be the object of unflattering remarks from the fans the
10 little girl—she was about 5 or 6—would stand up and shout
11 back at the offenders, "You stop calling my daddy that." Her
12 mother did her best to keep her quiet, but often to no avail.

13 The Cardinals carried 31 players on their roster. I got
14 to know some of the starters pretty well. The usual starting
15 lineup featured many great players. The team had two catchers
16 when I arrived: Bruce, or "Brusie," Ogradowski, and Mickey
17 Owen. Brusie was very quiet and seldom spoke, but was a
18 steady, dependable player. Mickey Owen, on the other hand,
19 was outgoing, friendly, and a great help to me. He beat out
20 Brusie for the number one catcher's slot by mid-season. He
21 was in the majors for about 10 years. When I last heard of
22 him years later he was a very popular sheriff in Missouri.

23 Johnny Mize played first base and was one of the team's
24 star players. He was a big guy, stood 6 feet, 2 inches,

1 weighed 215 pounds, quiet, businesslike, dependable. Stu
2 Martin played second base. He had some physical problems and
3 I think he'd gotten mixed up with the wrong crowd.

4 Donnie Gutteridge was an outstanding athlete. He played
5 third base and was an all-around great guy. Pepper Martin,
6 the Wild Horse of the Osage, was terrific. He would block
7 balls batted his way with his body if the ball took a bad hop.
8 He was always bruised. He was 35 when I met him, but still
9 going strong. He starred in the 1934 World Series.

10 Terry Moore was the best-looking guy on the team. He
11 could have been a twin to the movie star and singer Alan
12 Jones, who was famous for "Donkey Serenade." Don Padgett was
13 a real professional, well liked, dependable, a real gentleman.

14 I often have heard the Cardinals referred to as a motley
15 crew, the Gashouse Gang, a rowdy group. That's just bunk, but
16 it makes for good stories in the papers, and reporters are
17 often hard-pressed to fill their news quota.

18 Frankie Frisch called a meeting the first day I was
19 present, and we all filed into the locker room and sat in a
20 circle. Frisch ran over a rather long set of signals that
21 would be communicated from him or Leo Durocher to the third-
22 base coach and then to the players on the field. Joe Medwick,
23 the team's leading hitter, raised his hand and asked whether
24 anyone had considered that a spy might be in our midst. I

1 thought that was a nutty thing to say. Frisch ignored him.
2 But then I saw Medwick staring at me, and I thought, "Does
3 that fruitcake think that I'm capable of such a thing?" Later
4 I asked Terry Moore about it, and he said, "Don't pay any
5 attention to Ducky Medwick. That's the way he is." Mickey
6 Owen told me to steer clear of him as he was vicious and had a
7 terrible temper. He said that Medwick tangled with Dizzy Dean
8 one day. Paul Dean ran out to assist his brother, whereupon
9 Medwick grabbed a bat and swung it at both of them. Medwick,
10 in my opinion, was a mental case. I had nothing to do with
11 him if I could help it. I spent a lot of time catching
12 batting practice and noted that he had wonderful eye/hand
13 coordination. He could follow a curve ball right to the time
14 that it began to break and nail it cleanly. Not many have
15 that ability.

16 I continued to work with the coaches, but began to have
17 trouble with my right arm. I could never be certain where the
18 ball would go. I was told that Branch Rickey had been a
19 catcher. My informant related that in June, 1907, Branch was
20 catching for the Yankees, who were playing in the World Series
21 against the Senators. The Senators managed to steal 13 bases
22 due to bad throws made by Branch. I can imagine how bad he
23 must have felt.

1 To reach the bullpen where the pitchers wait for the call
2 to warm up, one had to walk along box seats adjacent to the
3 third base line in left field. Some women would drop small
4 containers of lipstick or other small cosmetic items on the
5 path we used. I'd stop, pick them up, tip my hat, smile, and
6 hand whatever it was they were dropping back to them. It was
7 flirtation, but it was fun. I felt quite cavalier.

8 People from my hometown, Taylorville, Illinois, came to
9 our games in large numbers. The fans included some of my
10 relatives on many occasions. They all, or most anyway, hoped
11 I would play. I tried my best to tell all concerned I was not
12 on the Cardinal roster, but was undergoing specialized
13 training. It was a little embarrassing and frustrating to say
14 the least. My dad didn't help the situation either. He even
15 envisioned me becoming a Hall of Famer like his buddy "Sunny
16 Jim" Bottomley. As my right arm became more painful it was
17 decided that I should desist from most athletic activity for
18 the time being. I returned home, but not to fame and glory as
19 my family had hoped. I was back in the real world.

20 I could sense the handwriting on the wall. But I tried
21 again later, signing with the Cincinnati Reds organization the
22 next year. Unfortunately, that didn't work out either. I was
23 getting pretty disgusted with the whole thing. I wanted to

1 get on to college, and finally said, "Enough is enough of this
2 stuff. The Lord has other plans for me."

3 Q. When did you actually begin college, sir?

4 A. In September of 1938. When I graduated from high
5 school there were about a dozen scholarships offered. But I
6 didn't take any of them. When I was determined to finally go
7 in '38, I simply announced: "I'm outta here; I'm going." I
8 contacted those schools, and asked if the scholarship still
9 good. All except Illinois College said No. I went to
10 Illinois College.

11 While I was at Illinois College that I met my wife to be.
12 She attended MacMurray College, which was an exclusive girls'
13 school in Jacksonville. Because of a scholarship offer, a
14 small factor, I went to Illinois College where I met my wife,
15 who was nearby. Life takes some wondrous turns. Everything
16 that one does has consequences—good and bad.

17 Q. Yes, sir.

18 A. Little things can make a difference. Sometimes a
19 big difference.

20 Q. Yes, sir, definitely. Did you have any further
21 experiences with baseball? When did you finally decide that
22 it wasn't going to be the career path you were going to
23 follow?

1 A. In the spring of '38 a fellow named Rick Rossiter,
2 who was a local scout for the Cincinnati Reds, offered me a
3 contract to play for the Caruthersville, Arkansas, team in the
4 Northeast Arkansas League. I went down and was with them for
5 a while. Night baseball had just come in, and we were playing
6 baseball under what seemed like no more light than what you
7 get from a normal bulb. Those balls were zipping in there. I
8 was scared to death I was going to get hit every time I took
9 my mask off. Then another thing that really bothered me was
10 the high turnover of players. I was so insecure. I think I
11 am a worrier by nature anyway. I didn't want to have to cope
12 with the feeling that tomorrow my job may be gone, no matter
13 what. Another thing that bothered me was to read about the
14 Babe Ruths, the Lou Gehrigs, and all the money they were
15 earning.

16 Q. Yes, sir.

17 A. But when you get to know people like Lefty Lemanski
18 who made the majors, and how they were doing, it was a
19 different story. If you can play 10 years in the majors,
20 that's great. But when you hit your 30s you better figure
21 that the end is in sight. I didn't want that. I wanted to be
22 able to stay a long time, as long as I wanted, in my career.
23 So I was eventually lost interest in professional sports. I
24 was doing a lot of praying about it, also. "Lord, do I want

1 to do this? Is this the thing for me?" And so forth. Then
2 the handwriting began to appear and I began to see that, no,
3 it wasn't for me.

4 So I eased out of it. It was easy for me to ease out,
5 too, because I wasn't much of a hotshot. It is easy for me to
6 be humble about such things. I had a lot to be humble about.

7 Q. So you mentioned from there, then, you decided just
8 to go back to school at Illinois College?

9 A. I did. Two years I gave the folks. Jim, my
10 brother, had graduated from high school. I told my dad that I
11 was leaving. I knew that he had no money to give me, and I
12 was going to have to do it on my own, but that was all right.
13 I always expected that. Again, I wrote to all the schools
14 that had offered me a scholarship in '36. There was still one
15 available and that was at Illinois College, in Jacksonville,
16 about 60 miles north of my hometown.

17 Travel then and travel now are different things. Sixty
18 miles seemed pretty far away. When the date of enrollment
19 finally arrived my mother drove me to Jacksonville and I
20 entered the halls of higher learning. I had saved a little
21 money. I think I had \$40. My tuition was \$30 per semester
22 with the scholarship. Sixty bucks a year was all I had to pay
23 for college—that was really something. Where was I going to
24 stay? I was told that a Mrs. Campbell rented sleeping rooms

1 to students, so after enrolling in the school I walked over to
2 Mrs. Campbell's residence. It was only a few blocks. She was
3 a small, thin woman who'd lost her husband several years
4 before, and she spoke of him often. As a matter of fact
5 almost every conversation she would mention "Buddy," that's
6 what she called her husband, as though he were still alive.
7 She'd preface much of what she said with, "As I told Buddy" or
8 "Buddy always believed," and so on.

9 I had a roommate, a guy named Bob Bell, who was a nice
10 fellow. His parents operated a farm near Lincoln, Illinois in
11 the center of the state. He had very little to say, but was a
12 nice guy. He was clean, he was neat and shy. I'd say, just
13 about the perfect guy to share a room with, because he was
14 never loud or noisy or anything like that. My first priority
15 now was to find a job. I had to support myself. It was
16 recommended that I try Cosgrove's Restaurant on Main Street in
17 the heart of the city. I went to see Mr. Cosgrove, who was a
18 big, no-nonsense kind of a fellow, very likeable; the sort of
19 guy who, like Branch Rickey, gets immediate respect. He asked
20 me, "Well, do you have any experience as a waiter?" I
21 wouldn't lie to anybody. I said, "No, I haven't." He said,
22 "Okay. I'll hire you anyway and I'll try to develop you into a
23 good waiter." I promised him I'd be the best waiter I could
24 be.

1 It was a very popular restaurant. The food was
2 excellent, business was good. My salary was \$.25 per hour.
3 He employed about a dozen waitresses and they all were
4 attractive and very nice. I liked everyone, but the girls
5 often took advantage of me. They'd place the used dishes and
6 utensils on large trays and then quickly clean the table to
7 get it ready for the next customer. In the meantime, they'd
8 call me; tell me the tray was too heavy for them to carry.
9 "You've got all those muscles. Would you take out the tray?"
10 they would ask. I'd lug these things out to the back end,
11 where we washed them. They didn't have automatic machines.
12 There were long wooden chutes, and the dishes were placed in
13 there. Dish washers scrubbed. Believe me, they were really
14 scrubbed. Cosgrove ran a tight ship. I didn't mind, but I
15 didn't get to do much waiting on customers. Practically none
16 at all unless it was late at night. I didn't get any tips.
17 The girls didn't share them, either. They worked on my ego.
18 They said a lot of nice things to me. I enjoyed that.

19 Q. So there were some benefits?

20 A. You bet. They were cute kids. Cosgrove served
21 great chili, and I have always been a chili guy, you know? I
22 liked the stuff. He allowed us to have one free meal during
23 our shift, and that would be when it was time to leave. The
24 place closed at midnight. I would always take a bowl of

1 chili. I was welcome to have another one if I wanted to. I'm
2 sure he'd have said nothing about the third. They were big
3 bowls so one was usually enough.

4 Most of the other guys were taking advantage of the
5 system. They'd order a steak, the best that was available.
6 Mr. Cosgrove called a meeting and got right down to this
7 subject. He said that he noticed from the records that
8 employees were ordering steaks. He added, "But Kenny here
9 just has a bowl of chili." I was a little embarrassed. I
10 don't think the guys liked that too well. He explained that
11 he couldn't afford the consumption of so many expensive
12 steaks. Again, that's where he should have left it, but then
13 he added that I set a fine example by taking chili. That
14 didn't help my popularity at all.

15 Illinois College was simply wonderful. The professors,
16 the teaching assistants, the staff, all of them, they were
17 just great. When I met with a counselor to select my courses,
18 I was asked what I wanted to be. I answered that I wanted to
19 be a medical doctor. I thought I'd like that. Well, I'd
20 shoot high, anyway. My initial courses were selected
21 accordingly and I began classes. I hadn't realized that the
22 science courses required students to spend a great deal of
23 time in the labs. The labs took all afternoon, and one didn't
24 get any credit for those hours.

1 Since I was supporting myself I had to devote at least
2 eight hours each weekday to gainful employment. Back I went
3 to the counselor and explained that situation. I was switched
4 from being a science major to an economics major. I have no
5 idea what one would ever do with an economics degree, but I
6 decided that I'll worry about that later.

7 I noticed signs around the campus advertising forthcoming
8 boxing matches. Earlier, Alex asked what were some of the
9 best things about boxing.

10 This is one. Tickets were 25 cents a person. Boxing
11 matches were a popular thing to do if you were doing a
12 fundraiser. The college football team would furnish as many
13 fighters as necessary. The program was filled except for the
14 heavyweight bout. My weight was over 175 pounds. That made
15 me a heavyweight. One contender was Larry Lorenz; Lawrence
16 "Larry" Lorenz. It was explained to me by the kid selling
17 tickets that—he was called "Larrupin'." I inquired, "What
18 does 'larrupin'' mean?" He responded, "That's the way Larry
19 Lorenz is. He beats people, he flogs them, he trashes them,
20 and that's what he'll do to you if you fight him." I said,
21 "I'd fight him," to which he responded, "Not if you've got any
22 sense, you won't."

23 I said, "In that case sign me up to fight him. I'm your
24 boy. I'm the guy you've been looking for." I was only 19. I

1 had reached my full height at 5-11 and I weighed 190 pounds.
2 I have lost a few of those inches in the ensuing years.
3 That's the awful truth.

4 Q. You look great, sir.

5 A. Thanks, Rob. The kid selling tickets said he would
6 have to turn the matter over to the coach, a fellow named Alf
7 Lamb." However, he thought it could be arranged. Coach Lamb
8 said they needed somebody to fight Lorenz, and it was okay if
9 I did it. Before long signs were all over the campus
10 announcing that the great "Lorry" Lorenz would fight a fellow
11 named "Crash" Crawford. That's the first and only time I've
12 been called "Crash."

13 The size of the crowd was a surprise when fight night
14 came. I think the date was September 25, 1938. About a dozen
15 supporters came over from Taylorville, including my brother
16 and my mother. We were the feature bout, the last bout on the
17 card. Finally it was our turn. The audience was in a gala
18 mood. The college football team all gathered around "Lorry,"
19 who was the star halfback on the team. Some of them were from
20 my hometown, but they didn't bother with me. They gathered
21 around his corner. They were a formidable-looking group,
22 especially a bully named Ed Blutheart. This guy was feared,
23 as I was to learn, by underclassmen.

1 I must admit that "Lorry" looked every inch a polished
2 athlete. He was some kind of guy. He was naturally graceful.
3 He was good-looking; he was very popular, well liked by both
4 faculty and students. The bell sounded, we came out of our
5 corners, and "Lorry" held his gloved hands in front of his
6 waist with his palms up. I couldn't believe it. His whole
7 face and upper torso were exposed.

8 Q. Your eyes got really big staring at that target in
9 front of you?

10 A. Yes indeed. My thoughts were, "I can't believe
11 this. What's wrong with that guy?" You know, you should keep
12 your hands here (guarding his face).

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. I later learned that "Lorry" was a guy who would go
15 out to a local bar and take over. I forget what the name of
16 it was, but anyway, he'd take over. He offered to whip
17 anybody in the joint. Sounds like an old John Wayne movie,
18 don't you agree?

19 Q. Yes, sir, he sounds quite formidable.

20 A. At any rate, he held his gloved hands, as I say, in
21 front of him, palms up, and rotated his fists in a circular
22 motion. He reminded me of photos I'd seen of the immortal
23 John L. Sullivan. Now, such a defensive position exposes the
24 fighter's head, and especially the point of the chin, which is

1 pretty vulnerable. I fainted with my left hand. All you have
2 to do is throw your hand out. It drew his attention. Then,
3 wham, I planted one right on his jaw. I had shifted my
4 weight, which creates considerable force. Poor "Lorry" was
5 unconscious for 30 minutes; which scared us all. He lay on
6 the canvas during the count, and didn't stir afterwards. A
7 hush came over the crowd. A doctor was called. The mood was
8 one of fear. We were all wondering if we were faced with a
9 tragedy? Boy, when he opened his eyes and spoke, I was a
10 happy man. He shook his head and said, "Where am I?"

11 We became the best of friends. I'm glad. He was 2 years
12 ahead of me in college, although we were the same age. When
13 he graduated, he served in the military—Navy, I think—and
14 then returned to Springfield, Illinois, his hometown. He went
15 into the insurance business. Eventually, he established his
16 own company, and I am confident that he became a millionaire,
17 based on his contributions to the college. He was
18 tremendously successful at everything he did and everybody
19 liked him.

20 Years later, some 10, 15 years after that, there was a
21 college reunion. A large group of the old grads gathered in a
22 circle on the campus. I was one of them and he was another—
23 drinking beer, I'm sure. One of the ladies at the far end of
24 this circle said: "Hey, 'Lorry', do you remember the night

1 Kenny decked you?" Well, thank goodness it wasn't followed by
2 laughter but silence. People didn't want to kid him, I guess.
3 He had had a few drinks. He was exasperated, and in a loud
4 voice he said, "That was just a lucky punch." I didn't want
5 to lose a friendship, or create any hard feelings, so I walked
6 over to him and I put out my hand and made him shake hands
7 with me. I put my left arm around his shoulder and I said,
8 "You're right, 'Lorry.' It was a lucky punch, but if you've
9 got any idea about getting back into the ring, forget it
10 because I don't do that anymore." That comment got a laugh.
11 I didn't want to lose his friendship, and civility returned;
12 thank goodness. It worked out all right, but I thought for a
13 moment it was going to get nasty.

14 I loved that school. I always have and always will;
15 however, there was a custom at that time—they don't have it
16 now—that upperclassmen could carry paddles and whack the
17 freshmen on the behind. I suppose that came from the military
18 academies, but I don't know. I always thought that kind of
19 stuff was undignified and humiliating and I didn't want any
20 part of it. Several of my classmates told me that Blutheart
21 had hit them so hard they had bad bruises on their rear ends.
22 I said, "What do you want me to do about it?" They said, "We
23 want you to threaten him." I said, "That's all right with
24 me."

1 I gave them my little talk about no street fighting,
2 because of the trouble you can get into. I said, "I'll tell
3 you what I'll do. You get that guy in the ring and I'll take
4 it from there." They tried, but he wouldn't cooperate. They
5 asked me to threaten him, and I said, "Look, that'll lead to
6 an argument and maybe there'll be a fist fight. Do you want
7 me to get thrown out of school? You want me to have to deal
8 with the local police?" I told them it had been difficult to
9 get to where I was now, and I didn't want to jeopardize it. I
10 again added, "You get him into the ring however you can and
11 I'll take over." I also told them, "No threatening anyone.
12 Just tell him it's a friendly boxing match. We were just
13 going to have a little fun." He'd seen me knock out his buddy
14 'Lorry,' and he declined the friendly invitation.

15 Q. Did he ever accept the challenge?

16 A. No, he did not. He refused to cooperate. I did tell
17 him once, "You're going to knock off those spankings or you
18 and I are going to tangle, and maybe right here." I was
19 pretty mad about the way he'd whacked at little skinny kids.
20 He eventually went to Wisconsin and lived in same neighborhood
21 as my mother-in-law. Apparently he still played the role of a
22 bully. He was an overbearing, arrogant type. He never
23 changed as far as I know.

1 He approached me one time with the paddle in hand. I
2 told him that if he hit me I was going to retaliate. He just
3 walked off.

4 Q. No response at all from him?

5 A. No response at all. He just turned and walked off.
6 In fact, he never spoke to me; he'd look the other way if I
7 showed up.

8 A fellow named Bob Fay was a few months older than I. He
9 was now in his junior year. I was in my first year. He
10 offered to help me in any way he could; invited me to join the
11 Sigma Pi Society, and offered to sponsor me, and I became a
12 member. The immortal William Jennings Bryan had been a member
13 during his years on the campus. He became one of my heroes as
14 I learned more about him. He was quite a guy. He made
15 something of himself.

16 Life moved on at a fast pace. My biggest problem was
17 keeping up with my studies. I'd taken French in high school.
18 Two years of a foreign language were required at Illinois
19 College. I chose Spanish. I didn't have any interest in it,
20 but I was required to take it anyway. I also was required to
21 take courses in higher math, and I felt that I didn't have the
22 grounding in math that I should have. I've always regretted
23 that. I was hard-pressed to pass even these basic courses.
24 However, my work at Cosgrove's progressed well, thanks to the

1 waitresses who were making me do all the heavy work. At least
2 they would tell Cosgrove what a good guy I was. Then I took
3 on an additional job. I had met a very striking young woman.
4 Her name was Carmen Martelli and she was very personable. She
5 had two younger sisters. They all worked for their father,
6 who had a fresh produce store.

7 Carmen, Angel, and Maria had these pretty dark eyes,
8 pretty smiles, jet-black hair; they were all just lovely.
9 Carmen brought me over, introduced me to her old man, and told
10 him that she had offered me a job. He didn't take kindly to
11 it. In fact, he didn't like it at all. I was very
12 circumspect around his girls. I was sure he was watching me
13 all the time.

14 His produce was first-rate. I thought, "Well, it's a
15 chance to pick up a few extra bucks." I really needed money,
16 so I decided to do it. Mr. Martelli often spoke in Italian.
17 When a customer would come in he'd point to Carmen and say,
18 "You take-a the first one." Then to the next girl, "You take-
19 a the second one. You take-a the third." I was on the tail
20 end. I was at the end of the pecking order, so I knew what he
21 thought about me.

22 While working at the produce store, I had a good idea. I
23 got a list of everything he sold and his prices. I went over
24 to Mr. Cosgrove and I told him, "Look, this looks like pretty

1 good prices to me." Cosgrove looked at this list. He says,
2 "Well, that's good, that's good. I'll take a truckload of this
3 and a truckload of that." I returned and cleaned out the
4 store of potatoes, and that changed the old man's mind. When
5 Martelli returned and saw that all the potatoes in the store
6 were gone, he didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. When I
7 gave him the check from Cosgrove he threw his arms around me
8 and said—I think it was "Bravo" or something like that.
9 After that, I would canvass all the restaurants on a regular
10 basis.

11 Q. Right.

12 A. I spent my time selling to restaurants; I didn't
13 fool with the store very much. Everything was going great. I
14 wasn't getting enough sleep, though, so I had to quit that
15 job. Carmen was getting a little too friendly, anyway. She
16 took over my duties and business prospered. Mr. Martelli
17 never paid me money, though. I never got one cent from him,
18 but every night when I was ready to leave he'd give me two big
19 sacks of vegetables, worth quite a bit. I'd take them home.
20 I had no way I could cook them. I gave them to Mrs. Campbell,
21 my land lady. She was delighted. She was a good cook, and
22 she'd prepare great meals. I was getting regular-type food.
23 That was a blessing.

1 Then she began giving me a lot of odd jobs around the
2 house. I'd fix this, fix that, fix something else; I put a
3 roof on the garage, mowed the lawn, general maintenance work.
4 More and more she was calling me "Buddy," which as I stated
5 earlier was the name of her late husband. She was about 40, I
6 guess, about twice my age. She had no children. I think it
7 was a second marriage for Mr. Campbell. Two ladies who lived
8 across the street that were Mrs. Campbell's buddies. They'd
9 call each other if the lights were off or anything appeared to
10 be amiss. They formed their own local protection agency.

11 I loved college. I liked my work. I couldn't find
12 enough time to study, however, and prepare for my lessons. I
13 couldn't seem to get organized. I thought how horrible it
14 would be if I flunked out after all that I had been through.
15 I couldn't let that happen. I quit my job selling produce. I
16 just had to have more time to sleep and study.

17 All the girls kissed me good-bye at Bartelli's. It's
18 easy to like Italians, well, some of them, anyway. Mrs.
19 Campbell was disappointed to lose the food arrangement, but I
20 told her I was running out of energy and had to regroup. I
21 got a little uneasy about being called "Buddy" every now and
22 then and I thought, I'd better start thinking of living
23 somewhere else.

1 Bob Gunnison was a senior at Illinois College. He was
2 the lay minister of the local Episcopal Church. The church
3 couldn't afford an ordained minister. Bob was a lay minister
4 and was doing their services. For that he could live in the
5 parsonage, which was a big, beautiful house. He offered me a
6 room and bath. I moved in and enjoyed being there. He didn't
7 charge me anything.

8 We left on good terms when I was called to the colors a
9 little later. He used to play the organ quite often. He was
10 a pretty good player. In church I believe only church music
11 ought to be played. Often he would break into the "Yes, Sir,
12 That's My Baby" jingle or something like that. It got to be a
13 little disturbing. At these times, no church members were
14 present. I thought that he was a little far out in that
15 regard, nonetheless. Once my cousin, Jim Fleming, and a
16 couple of aunts came through Jacksonville. They came to see
17 me at the parsonage. They met Bob and talked to him. They
18 began to get rather suspicious, and my cousin said, "This
19 kid's unlike any preacher I've ever seen." I'll admit they
20 were right.

21 I resided with Bob about 6 months. The days flew by and
22 then came Christmas vacation. I wanted to go back to the coal
23 mine during this couple of weeks we had off. If I would work
24 with the "recovery gang," which was exceedingly dangerous, the

1 pay was pretty high. I took it. This would give me close to
2 a hundred dollars to take back to college. That would pay a
3 lot of bills. The "recovery gang" was probably the most
4 disagreeable and dangerous job in the mine. For that reason,
5 it was often the younger and stronger men who did this work.
6 The reason they call it the "recovery gang" is that after the
7 miners had extracted as much coal from an area as possible,
8 usable equipment had to be recovered. The tracks I refer to
9 aren't like railroad tracks, they were much smaller. Also,
10 steel ties, and the posts that hold up the rock roof had to be
11 recovered. The way one would get the posts out was to tie a
12 chain around them. Then the chain was attached to a motor,
13 and this motor would reverse and jerk the post out. Much of
14 the time, the tunnel ceiling would come down. The posts,
15 tracks, and ties were the first items to be removed. The
16 posts came last, That's where the danger came in. That's
17 what I was doing. You'd tie the chain to the post and swiftly
18 move out. The moment that chain was jerked, you'd better not
19 be there. One had to run sometimes.

20 Q. So it helped that you were a good athlete so you
21 could get out of there pretty quick, right?

22 A. That's right, Rob. I could handle that just fine.
23 That extra money looked pretty good. You just couldn't linger
24 around that place. We'd install the recovered items in the

1 new entryways. I went to work early, very early. We
2 carpooled, but I never drove. I didn't have a car. I was
3 always picked up. It cost me a dollar a day. I was picked up
4 usually at 5 a.m. and by 6 o'clock we were on the cage ready
5 to go down. I always joined the same group of miners; there
6 were twelve of us every day. On the cage everyday was this
7 guy named "Rough" Alexander. Rough was a nickname.

8 Q. Yes, sir.

9 A. He was built along the lines of the Hulk. He was
10 extremely strong. In spite of being built like an ape, he was
11 a pretty nice-looking fellow. He had two sons who were about
12 my age, and they were a credit to the family. They didn't
13 work in the mine. They seemed to have pretty good jobs
14 elsewhere. Now "Rough's" IQ didn't set any records, but he
15 was one of the good guys.

16 I developed a verbal exchange with "Rough." every
17 morning it was exactly the same. I would get on the cage, and
18 usually he was there first. He always kept his head down. I
19 would say, "Good morning, Rough." He would always respond in
20 a deep, deep voice, "Morning, morning." I would say, "How are
21 you doing this morning, Rough?" "In shape, in shape," he
22 replied. "How do you know you're in shape, Rough?" I asked
23 He'd say, "'Cause." I'd say, "'Cause why?" "'Cause, I jumped

1 out of bed this morning; I turned a flip-flop; and I kissed my
2 own ass." Was his inevitable response.

3 All the guys in our group would just howl. They thought
4 it was the funniest thing they'd ever heard. For as long as I
5 was there it was that same thing every morning. Somehow I
6 didn't come up at the same time as "Rough" at night, so we
7 didn't have the chance to further our dialogue at the end of
8 our shift.

9 Q. I gather that shortly after this your vacation ended
10 and you returned to college.

11 A. That's right, Rob. I returned for the second
12 semester. I was still working at Cosgrove's Restaurant. This
13 fellow came in, and we began to talk. One thing led to
14 another. He owned a bus company, and he eventually offered me
15 a job. It was full-time, 48 hours a week, 8 hours a day, 6
16 days a week. He allowed me to study on the job so I took it.
17 I was a ticket agent, and if I had any spare time, I could go
18 to the bus garage and work there. There was no shortage of
19 things to do. That ticket agent job provided the funds I
20 needed to get through school. Never in college did I have the
21 time to study that I would have liked to have had, but I
22 managed to get by. I wanted that B.A. more than anything
23 else.

1 In 1941 I received a draft notice. I was in my third
2 year of school, and wanted in the worst way to finish. I was
3 allowed to finish that semester, but I would have to go in the
4 Army in June when school was out. I decided to go before the
5 board and appeal for an extra year to finish college. It'd
6 been pretty tough to get where I was. The board meeting was a
7 very unpleasant experience. A fellow named Merle Caine was
8 President of the Board. He ran a granary in Jacksonville. He
9 took me to task and questioned my patriotism, my courage, and
10 all that sort of thing. I thought that was pretty bad and
11 uncalled for. At any rate, he said: "Absolutely not. You're
12 going to go as soon as this term is over."

13 Q. What did your parents think of that, sir?

14 A. I didn't tell them about it at first. When my
15 parents learned that I would soon be drafted they were
16 shocked. They thought I was in college for the duration. I
17 don't remember them having much to say about it. When summer
18 came, I thought I would try to get into one of the flying
19 programs. I applied to be a Naval flying cadet. When I
20 learned that it involved landing airplanes on aircraft
21 carriers out in the ocean, I wanted no part of that. I went
22 into the Army at the end of July of 1941.

23 Q. Where did you do your initial training, sir?

1 A. Fort Bragg, North Carolina. Shortly after arriving
2 I began to play on the baseball team and also got involved in
3 the boxing program, which was very popular. I was a pretty
4 good boxer at the time, and I won every bout that I fought,
5 except the last one. One day in August of '41, a post
6 tournament had reached its end, and the championship was to be
7 decided. I was informed that I would fight a fellow named
8 Joel Leffingwell.

9 This was the bout I talked about earlier, the one in
10 which Jack Dempsey, the "Manassa Mauler," was the guest
11 referee for the fight. I had the opportunity to meet him.
12 The other fellow was a professional boxer, but I didn't think
13 he was all that good. I lost it on points. It was the only
14 one I lost out of 29 bouts. My regimental commander protested
15 the outcome and wanted a rematch. He argued with Dempsey, but
16 he didn't get anywhere. A motion picture was made of it, if
17 you could call it that. It was pretty jumpy. I watched the
18 film and although I hated to lose, I wasn't ashamed of the way
19 I boxed. It was a good fight. The crowd was seemingly
20 pleased with it.

21 Q. What was it like to meet Jack Dempsey?

22 A. For me, it was a real thrill. For one thing, he was
23 a big guy, about six-two. He was 47 years old at the time. I
24 was only 22. He seemed like a pretty old fellow to me, but he

1 was in the prime of his life. Very, very handsome fellow.
2 Coal-black hair. He was part Cherokee Indian. That explains
3 his rather swarthy appearance and the coal-black hair. He was
4 a good looking guy and very nice. I chatted with him and
5 years later I visited his bar and restaurant in New York City.
6 In a few words, he was a great guy and I liked him. Actually,
7 I've found most celebrities I've met to be likeable people.
8 It's been rare that they've been anything other than polite to
9 me. My regimental commander kept pressing for a rematch (and
10 that was great with me) with this fellow. I was ordered,
11 shortly thereafter, to go to Fort Sill, Oklahoma, to attend
12 Officer Candidate School.

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. I entered Class Number 5. Class Number 1 was still
15 in the mill. It had not yet graduated. I say that because it
16 shows how early in the game it was. I went through OCS and
17 was granted a commission. My first assignment out of OCS was
18 somewhat of a disappointment. I was hoping that I'd be a
19 battery executive. I wanted to start with something big. But
20 when the orders arrived, they said that I was to be assigned
21 as a personnel adjutant. Have you ever heard of a personnel
22 adjutant?

23 Q. Yes, sir.

1 A. I had never heard of one at the time. I had no idea
2 what the job consisted of, and again, I wanted to get where
3 the action was. Nonetheless, here I was, in a paperwork job.
4 I wasn't too happy about it. I did an unusual thing at this
5 point. In hindsight it was smart, also. It was a practice
6 that I followed throughout the rest of my career.

7 Q. Yes, sir.

8 A. Throughout my life really. I had a crew of five
9 enlisted people in my new office: a master sergeant, a couple
10 of sergeants, a corporal, and, I think, a private. The
11 private was like me; he had just come in. The master sergeant
12 had nearly 30 years of experience and really knew his stuff.
13 We had two rooms assigned to us. When I got there, I called a
14 meeting. I got the boys together and said, "Okay, let's talk
15 about this. First of all, let me confess that I don't know a
16 darn thing about what a personnel adjutant is supposed to do.
17 And how about you fellows? How much do you know?" The master
18 sergeant said, "I've been doing this 28 years." I responded,
19 "Well, obviously, you're the guy that knows most about it."
20 There was a little more conversation and I said, "Listen,
21 fellows, I think what we ought to do is this: let's make the
22 master sergeant the boss of this outfit. Let him run it, and
23 don't say anything about it outside this room. Don't give me
24 away that we're working that way, but we will follow his

1 orders." I asked the master sergeant if that was OK with him.
2 He said—he always talked in the third person—"If that's the
3 way the lieutenant wants it, that's the way we'll do it."
4 Obviously, he was very pleased. This guy ran the show from
5 this point on, and he didn't hesitate to give me orders to do
6 this and do that. He was quite nice, and it was fine with me.
7 I told him if ever I goofed up, just call my hand on it
8 quickly so we could fix it. We got along beautifully and it
9 all worked out fine.

10 About a month, maybe two months later, the battalion
11 commander called me in. His name was Lieutenant Colonel Frank
12 Smith Kilpatrick. He was a West Point graduate, Class of '24,
13 tough and bright. I thought I was going to be chewed out. He
14 had a smile on his face, when he called me in and told me to
15 sit down. He said, "Lieutenant, I want to tell you something.
16 I've never had an officer that's caught on to a job like you
17 have, as quickly as you've done it. Your work has been letter
18 perfect. In the division, we can promote from second
19 lieutenant to first lieutenant. No need to involve higher
20 headquarters. I'm happy to say that you have been promoted,"
21 and he handed me the paperwork. I was pleasantly surprised.

22 Q. Yes, sir.

23 A. As it turned out, I was the first one in my OCS
24 class to be promoted.

1 Q. How far along into your career were you at that
2 point?

3 A. About 2 months.

4 Q. Two months? That's very impressive.

5 A. Yes, it wasn't bad at all. Eventually, I was sent
6 to a battalion in another division. The commander was a
7 fellow named Frenzel. He was also a West Point graduate and a
8 magnificent officer who really knew his business. He sent me
9 to Fort Sill twice to get some of the latest gunnery
10 instruction. I thought I was becoming quite a pro at it, and
11 I did enjoy it. A little later, I finally became a battery
12 commander, which was a lot of fun. I really enjoyed that.

13 Q. Where did you command?

14 A. I was in the 103rd Division at Camp Clairborne.

15 Q. Sir, you mentioned that you did your basic training
16 at Fort Bragg. Who was training at Fort Bragg at that time?

17 A. They had 100,000 troops on the post at the time.
18 The Field Artillery Replacement Training Center was one of the
19 largest entities on the installation. I think there was a
20 division, maybe two of them there, as well, but I'm not sure.
21 I paid little attention to any organization other than my own.

22 Q. You were assigned FA then, sir?

23 A. Yes. I was assigned to the field artillery, and I
24 stayed in artillery until I transferred over to The Judge

1 Advocate General's Corps in 1951, after finishing law school.
2 I didn't do a lot of basic training, as I recall, because I
3 was training with the boxing team all the time.

4 We'd go out and run every day and work in the gym and so
5 forth, and then put on these fights. I really enjoyed that.
6 That was just splendid, but what I learned, as far as being a
7 soldier is concerned, is kind of a blur. Thankfully, I picked
8 it up as I went along.

9 Q. When did you know you wanted to be an officer?

10 A. When I initially arrived at Fort Bragg, I hadn't
11 thought much about it, but I went to the movies, and oh, it
12 was horrible. Enlisted soldiers sat on concrete blocks with
13 boards on them in a big tent, and watched the movie. My back
14 ached like everything once the movie was over. There was a
15 row of chairs that were for the officers and their wives or
16 girlfriends or whatever. At seven o'clock they marched in and
17 filled up those seats, and the movie started. I remember
18 telling a buddy of mine, "Who are those guys?" He said,
19 "They're officers." I said, "Well, that's what we ought to
20 shoot for so we can be more comfortable, and it'd be a better
21 life. How does one become an officer?" Well, it seemed
22 nobody knew. In fact, even the officers weren't sure of the
23 process. I knew there had to be some guidance somewhere and I
24 had to find it. I found the regulation that covered it, and

1 using that as a guide, I applied for a commission. Much to my
2 surprise, my packet went through, and I was ordered to Fort
3 Sill with the class number 5 which began in December.

4 Q. You didn't have any advisement on the application
5 process; you just figured it all out on your own?

6 A. Yes, that's correct. Figured it all out myself.

7 Q. Just because you wanted a better movie seat?

8 A. I implied that because I was trying to be funny. I
9 did desire a higher position. More responsibility, more
10 opportunity. It'd be better to be an officer than to be a GI,
11 I thought. Make the most of what you've got. Make something
12 of yourself.

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. Just do the best you can was my creed, and that
15 worked out fine. As I explained, I was in the 85th doing fine
16 as a personnel adjutant, and then another division was formed,
17 the 103rd. They had to take officers out of the 85th as cadre.
18 I was one of those picked and transferred to the 103rd. This
19 time I went directly into a battery commander position which
20 was great.

21 Q. Yes, sir.

22 A. It's been so long ago, it's a little hard to
23 remember everything. I mentioned Lt. Colonel Bill Frenzel
24 before. It was at the 103rd that he was my new boss. He sent

1 me back to Fort Sill for training in gunnery, and I'd come
2 back and teach the other guys. I thought that was pretty
3 neat. Unfortunately, I got into a little conflict with the
4 executive officer. He was a nitpicker, and he was on my back
5 a great deal. Looking back on it, I was wrong. I complained
6 about it to the battalion commander and I shouldn't have done
7 that. It wasn't that bad, and he wasn't really a bad guy,
8 just kind of an old fuddy-duddy reserve officer, he might have
9 seen in action in World War I. Anyway, I made the remark,
10 "There isn't room for both of us in the battalion," which was
11 dumb. The next morning, there were orders waiting for me, and
12 I was sent to the Louisiana Maneuver Area.

13 This move turned out to be a blessing, although at the
14 time it was a place where no one wanted to go. The idea
15 seemed to be that it was where they sent the losers and the
16 guys that goof up and deserve a hardship tour. That's the way
17 they punished you. That was what people were saying when I
18 arrived. I think this is somewhat exaggerated.

19 Q. You took command of a battery as a lieutenant?

20 A. No. I was promoted to captain about the same time.
21 Promotions came pretty fast in those days. I was promoted to
22 major in 1944.

23 Q. Okay.

1 A. I was commissioned in '42, but 2 years later I had
2 already been promoted to major. Promotions were fast if you
3 got yourself in the right position, particularly a unit that
4 was headed for combat.

5 Some of my friends, even relatives as a matter of fact,
6 did everything in the world to stay out of combat. This one
7 cousin, who had a lot of ability and should have done well,
8 was a captain when I came in. He was about 10 years older
9 than I, was already a captain when things started. Yet, he
10 remained a captain. He never got one promotion for the whole
11 shebang. He just wouldn't go where the action was, you see?

12 Q. Yes, sir.

13 A. I mean, if I'm going to be in the Army, I want to
14 get in on the fighting end of it.

15 I was sent to the Louisiana Maneuver Area, and it turned
16 out to be a terrific experience. I lived in a tent, with a
17 lot of snakes, scorpions, creatures like that around. As a
18 matter of fact, in the morning you had to shake your boots,
19 turn your boots over and shake them because snakes would crawl
20 into them at night. The guy in command was Colonel Rufus
21 Bratton and, I remember asking: "What'd he do to qualify to
22 come here?" They told me that he was the intelligence officer
23 in Hawaii that predicted the Japanese were going to attack us.
24 Nobody paid any attention to him. Then when the Japanese did

1 attack, apparently he kept saying: "I told you so. I told you
2 so." Well, that ticked a few people off, so he wound up in
3 the Louisiana Maneuver Area. I found that rather funny.
4 Shows there are times to clam up.

5 We all worked hard. It was a terrific place to learn
6 tactics. Later, I went to Command and General Staff College
7 at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, I discovered that I was pretty
8 well grounded in that sort of thing. While I was in the
9 Louisiana Maneuver Area, General George C. Marshall, the Army
10 Chief of Staff, came for a visit. It was on a Sunday morning.
11 We had to be on the job seven days a week. He came right
12 smack dab to our troop movement office where two of us, myself
13 and Lieutenant Colonel Al Jennings were working. As the
14 troops, the divisions, and the corps would come in we would
15 place them where they had to be in order to carry out the
16 exercises. It was very challenging to test divisions and
17 corps. It actually led to some highly placed commanders being
18 relieved.

19 Q. Yes, sir.

20 A. But anyway, here's George Marshall with a couple of
21 aides in there, and we had to brief him. Fortunately, we did
22 a fine job.

23 Q. Tell me more about the Louisiana Maneuver Area.

1 A. Well, it was a wonderful place to get experience,
2 particularly if you were preparing for combat, because the
3 conditions were simulated to replicate combat as closely as
4 possible. The focus was on tactics and other problems one
5 faces in combat.

6 Q. Did it later become Fort Polk?

7 A. No, it's still the Louisiana Maneuver Area, so far
8 as I know. But it probably is not used as much anymore. Fort
9 Polk was there at the time, and is still an active
10 installation.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. When General Marshall came through that Sunday
13 morning, things were quiet. He and his aides made a beeline
14 right for our office. One aide said, "We want to be briefed
15 on everything you're doing." Fortunately, we knew our jobs
16 well and we came through with flying colors. In fact, we only
17 got chewed out once, which I thought was pretty good. Al kept
18 referring to triple-A; "this triple-A unit is here; this
19 triple-A is there." Finally, General Marshall stopped him and
20 said, "What do you mean, Colonel, by 'triple-A'?" Al
21 explained, "Sir that means 'anti-aircraft artillery.'" The
22 General replied, "Well, why don't you say so. From here on,
23 don't use abbreviations. Spell it out, because you don't know
24 whether everybody understands what you are saying or not."

1 Well, old Al had to stand there like a grade school kid. We
2 got a big laugh out of it later. I said, "Well, at least
3 he'll remember you." I said to Al, "General Marshall didn't
4 say much to me so, and I liked him. He is a very nice guy.
5 It think he has a great future." You know the admiration we
6 all have for him. He was shorter than I thought he would be
7 and he had a little belly, which was poking out a little. He
8 was a very serious man. Everything about him was neat. His
9 uniform was pressed and his brass shined to high heaven. He
10 never smiled. I don't think I would have liked to work for
11 him. General Marshall was too tough, too demanding. But as I
12 told Al the man had a great future. Al never did see my
13 point, which I still think is funny.

14 Q. Yes, sir.

15 A. Boy, I thought to myself and I told Al when he left,
16 "You know, Al, we've been in the presence of greatness." You
17 could just feel it with this guy. Later, I learned what he
18 told to Eisenhower when Ike took over to run the invasion and
19 what followed. Marshall's orders to him were, "Ike, you go
20 over there and do what has to be done. Keep me informed as
21 much as you can." That was it, and that's all he had to say,
22 and that's exactly the way it worked. He didn't tell
23 Eisenhower that he could bomb this and bomb that. He was to
24 use his own judgment. I think that is terrific leadership.

1 Q. Yes, sir.

2 A. There were a number of others that came through our
3 Louisiana area. I remember General Patton lined up a lot of
4 generals one day on the parade field. The rest of us peons
5 stayed in our tents. We didn't want to get out there. Patton
6 walked up and down that line of generals, slapping his leg
7 with his riding crop, just raising hell with them, swearing,
8 glaring, yelling. Every other word was a swear word and they
9 stood there at strict attention. I didn't think it was the
10 thing to do—bawling out people of that rank in view of lesser
11 ranks. Not very classy.

12 General Omar Bradley came through the Maneuver Area when
13 I was there. So did General Courtney Hodges and General Bill
14 Simpson, who had just taken command of Ninth Army. The
15 Pentagon cadre'd again, took personnel, and formed the Ninth
16 Army Headquarters. The G-3 of Ninth Army, a fellow named
17 Armistead D. Mead, West Point, Class of '24, was a terrific
18 guy, terrific leader, very knowledgeable. I admired him so
19 much. He made some selections, from personnel at the
20 Louisiana Maneuver Area. I was one of the guys selected. I
21 was called in, told to go see him, and I thought he just
22 wanted to meet me, you know. He asked me what I was doing.
23 We chatted a little bit, and it was then that he made up his
24 mind that he was going to give me a job with him. I stayed

1 with him all through the year of 1944 and then '45 until the
2 war was over. He was a wonderful leader. Now, I'll tell you
3 in a moment or two what I did during the war.

4 Q. Yes, sir. That would be great.

5 A. Well, let's see. After the Louisiana Maneuver Area
6 stint I was transferred to Ninth Army Headquarters, in San
7 Antonio, Texas.

8 Q. Okay.

9 A. My wife and I were married in '42. We eloped, and
10 that was something I'd do over. Looking back, it was the
11 thing to do.

12 Q. Where did you meet your wife, sir?

13 A. In college. She was my college sweetheart. She
14 went to MacMurray College in Jacksonville, Illinois. It was
15 love at first sight. I fell head over heels for her the first
16 time I saw her. I mean, it happens, and boy, I was bitten by
17 that bug, I'll tell you.

18 Q. You were at Illinois College and she was at
19 MacMurray?

20 A. That's right. They are in the same city,
21 Jacksonville, Illinois. About a thousand girls were enrolled
22 at MacMurray. Illinois College had about 500 students, maybe
23 300 boys, so you can see the ratio of men to women.

24 Q. Yes, sir. How did you meet her?

1 A. Well, that's an interesting story. The girls at
2 MacMurray would ask the boys to their dances. A girl named
3 Marge Nelson, who was a roommate of my wife's, came into the
4 bus station where I worked and asked me if I could be her
5 guest at the dance that was coming up. I said, "Yes, fine."
6 A week later, I received a call from her. She said her
7 roommate had a date, but he lived in Indiana, and he couldn't
8 make it, so Madge was without a date. Could I get one of the
9 boys from Illinois College? Well, as I indicated, the ratio
10 was such it was a little difficult. I recruited a guy named
11 Zimmerman, who chewed gum all the time. I heard about that
12 for the rest of my wife's life, but I told her I did the best
13 I could. I got him to come along. He was a little short
14 fellow who was a freshman. I was a sophomore. Madge was a
15 junior.

16 I was introduced to Madge, and holy mackerel, she was a
17 real dreamboat. But this little guy, Zimmerman was her date.
18 I wanted to switch partners. This kid, Zimmerman, said
19 nothing doing. He wouldn't switch. I had to convince him to
20 change partners. He finally complied. I'd call her every
21 night. Finally she said, "Well, understand that the deal is
22 we have an agreement among the girls that live in this suite
23 together, and we have agreed not to date anyone that goes out
24 with one of the other girls." I said, "Okay, but I'll see

1 what I can do about that." We had a good-looking bus driver
2 named Lawrence McTee, and I confided to him that a gal from
3 MacMurray had seen him and thought he was really the good
4 Lord's gift to women. He was a pretty egotistical fellow.

5 Q. Yes, sir.

6 A. The drivers wore uniforms, looked pretty spiffy. He
7 looked good in his uniform. He kept it polished and pressed.
8 I called Marge and said (liar that I am, I guess), "There's
9 one of the bus drivers who has seen you, and he's taken with
10 you. He'd like to date you." That was great. She loved that.
11 I set it up then and there. Then I called Madge and told her
12 what was cooking, and I said, "If Marge is going to be dating
13 these guys, you know, that ought to free you." She agreed.
14 She thought I was right, So, we started. I had to knock off
15 some of the competition. Time marched on. We talked about
16 getting married eventually.

17 Q. Tell me about that decision.

18 A. We agreed to tie the know as soon as I could
19 accumulate enough money, get a job, or whatever it took. She
20 was a year ahead of me in school, because I had laid out of
21 school, two years to work in the coal mine. She had gone on
22 to MacMurray and graduated in '41, and my class was '42. In
23 August of 1942 she came to visit me in Louisiana. I told her
24 that I didn't think I would be able to get to Illinois until

1 the war was over. I figured that if we waited too long to
2 marry, we might drift apart.

3 I said I thought we ought to just elope and get married.
4 We did in Hattiesburg, Mississippi. I would do it again. It
5 saved her dad a world of money which he didn't have, and I
6 didn't have to go through a lot of being looked over by people
7 I didn't know in her hometown.

8 Q. Yes, sir.

9 A. That was the way that happened. Now it's
10 January 1944. I'm in Fort Sam Houston. We were getting ready
11 to go overseas. I had Madge come out there. I found an
12 apartment. It was like another honeymoon. A few months later
13 we were told we were going to England soon. My mother and dad
14 came out and stayed with us a few days. We had already lost
15 my brother. He was killed in February '43. So it was a hard
16 time for my parents. Some advised me to inform the Department
17 of the Army that I was the sole surviving son and request to
18 be excused from combat. I wanted to go. I would never make
19 such a request.

20 My brother had been gone about 8 months, and that was
21 pretty tough. My mother almost broke down. We all said good-
22 bye. My wife and parents drove away. A short time later we
23 got on a train and went to Camp Shanks, New York. I noticed
24 that my left foot was swelling and red. What in the world was

1 wrong with it? I didn't want to go see a doctor because we
2 were getting ready to ship out, and if something was wrong
3 with me, I might be sent to a hospital.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. If I'd have to stay in there, my organization would
6 go off and leave me. I would be transferred to another
7 organization, and then I'm with a bunch of strangers. I
8 wanted to get in the invasion, so I decided I wouldn't say
9 anything about it. By the time we were to get on board the
10 ship, I could hardly walk. It turned out to be cellulitis.
11 The division surgeon was angry. He chewed me up one side and
12 down the other. "I hope it's amputated," he said. There
13 wasn't much he could do with me because the guys were all
14 boarding the Queen Elizabeth. The doctor said, "You report
15 directly to the hospital." I went aboard and checked into the
16 hospital. The staff were all British. It was a wonderful
17 ship. One of the best in the world.

18 The hospital was great, and I was the only patient in it.
19 About six or eight nurses gathered around me, and we sailed
20 off. The British doctors went right to work on my infected
21 foot. By the time we got to England, the swelling was gone,
22 and I was ready for duty.

23 Aboard ship, I was in a bed on wheels. It was designed
24 to be movable. During drills, I was to go to a designated

1 place by a lifeboat. Nurses pushed me. Four were designated
2 to accompany me. When I reached the deck, a lot of guys began
3 on me. They accused me of gold bricking, shirking duty, that
4 sort of thing. It was kind of embarrassing. When they began,
5 I'd take the covers and pull them up over my head. The
6 British nurses—one particularly, Margaret Field—would take
7 my side. The fellows would say something, put me down some
8 way, and Margaret would give them two cents' worth. She was a
9 nice young woman from Bristol.

10 Q. Yes, sir.

11 A. We finally arrived in Great Britain and I was
12 surprised that Bristol was our destination. I got in touch
13 with her parents as she had asked me to do. Her mother said
14 they didn't know where she was, that was secret stuff,
15 classified, but it turned out they didn't know she was on the
16 *Queen Elizabeth*. Her father was a university professor at
17 Cambridge and a very nice guy. Her mother was just a doll.
18 In fact, her mother told me, "Why don't you bring your friends
19 and come over on weekends when you have some time." Several
20 of us would get dressed up and go to their home. We usually
21 had watercress sandwiches. They looked like grass in between
22 a couple of pieces of bread, but we had enjoyable times
23 together nonetheless.

1 Rations were a little hard to come by, so we'd take what
2 we had, and it turned out to be a lot of fun for all
3 concerned.

4 Q. What was your position over there?

5 A. General Mead called me in shortly after our arrival.
6 He said, "Have you ever heard of a G-3 (Air)? I said, "No,
7 sir." He said, "Well, you'd better learn what they do,
8 because that's what you are right now." He explained it this
9 way: "We will have an Air Force Group Command, a Tactical Air
10 Command, assigned to the Ninth Army Headquarters. It will
11 have fighter bombers. Our G-3 people will consist of about a
12 half dozen officers. Your job will be to accompany platoons
13 or perhaps work alone to find suitable targets for the
14 Tactical Air Command. Every day you look for what's holding
15 up the advance of our troops, and then you come back and make
16 this known to the Tactical Air Command. They will do what
17 they can to eliminate those targets." I did that every day
18 from the time I got into combat until the war ended in May of
19 '45. It was dangerous duty, but I found a lot of satisfaction
20 in doing it. There were a lot of thrill also. It was a full
21 colonel position. I was a captain. I was told that I probably
22 would not hold this position very long, because there would be
23 someone else of higher rank who was available and qualified
24 for it.

1 Q. Right.

2 A. That happened. Sometime later, a colonel came in
3 named William Fagg, a West Pointer, to take the position. I
4 then became a lone operator, which was fine with me. General
5 Mead got me promoted to major in the latter part of 1944. I
6 was also awarded the Bronze Star and the Belgian and French
7 Fourrageres.

8 I had a jeep, a driver and myself and that was it, which
9 was fine, because I didn't have to worry about troops. I'd
10 usually locate the forward-most units, which would be platoons
11 that were out probing, looking for the enemy. I probed, and
12 usually located the worthwhile targets. I saw a lot of
13 action.

14 As you might imagine, there was a lot of fighting. One
15 time I joined up with a group that was going through Aachen,
16 Germany. I was trying to find out the strength of the Germans
17 both in manpower and equipment. Four of us were walking down
18 a street. One was an old friend. I had played ball with him
19 at Bragg. I never remembered his name. We always called him
20 "Jimmy Dykes," and he loved that. The real Jimmy Dykes was a
21 star third baseman for the Philadelphia Athletics under Connie
22 Mack, a great manager. We expected to run into enemy soldiers
23 and checked our weapons. I carried two .45s, one in a
24 shoulder holster and one on my hip. I had a carbine also.

1 Dykes had his gun out and ready. We came to some big
2 buildings on a corner. Moving toward us, but out of our
3 sight, were about a half a dozen German soldiers. We met
4 right at the corner. A young German officer led the group.
5 Dykes had his gun out and poked it quickly into the belly of
6 the German leader and pulled the trigger twice. The victim,
7 of course, fell to the pavement. As he lay there in a fetal
8 position, he kept kicking. I guess it was a nervous reaction.
9 We all scattered. We went for cover. I remember thinking to
10 myself, well, this is what war is. It's pretty terrible.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. Young men killing each other isn't so pleasant. I
13 was under sniper fire a number of times. Snipers don't have a
14 prayer, I'll tell you. That's a dangerous racket they are
15 into. Whenever it became evident that snipers were shooting
16 at us, sharpshooters were designated to take them out. The
17 leader would call out a couple of names. Those selected
18 would hold their hands up to acknowledge their selection.
19 That is, they heard the orders. But they made no sound to
20 acknowledge it. They understood the need for silence. If
21 they knew where the shot came from, they would surround the
22 place. It wasn't long until you'd hear one shot, and it was
23 good-bye sniper. They always got those guys. I saw so many
24 acts of bravery. Most were unrecorded and unrewarded. I saw

1 soldiers walk right into harm's way and somehow survive. Some
2 didn't survive.

3 Q. Yes, sir.

4 A. I came very close to death one night, and it was
5 foolish. Since I'd lost my brother, I wanted to do everything
6 that I had to do, but I didn't want to take any chances, if
7 possible. There's no point in being stupid, you know, or
8 careless. I resolved not to do that.

9 Q. You mentioned that you were often on the frontlines
10 over there. Were you ever involved in any of the historic
11 battles?

12 A. Yes. I guess I was involved in about all of them
13 that happened in the Ninth Army area. I was always looking
14 for the enemy, and then arranging for air support as needed.
15 I would talk to the commanders and, of course, they knew what
16 I did. I'd say, "Do you need air power? How much do you
17 need?" They always wanted it. Then they'd give me the
18 reasons to send help. I called it "pleading their case." I
19 would always ask how many troops were involved and whether
20 U.S. troops were at risk. That sort of thing. I'd go to TAC
21 Headquarters, and report all of this. It was like everything
22 else. You make your case for what you want, or what you need.
23 Commanders always wanted air power, if they could get it.

24 Q. Tell us about the invasion?

1 A: General Mead told me to go to Southampton, take a
2 boat to Omaha Beach, find the G-3 (Air) of the First Army and
3 learn how he does his job. He added that he would send for me
4 when it was time for me to rejoin the Ninth Army. I went down
5 to Southampton the next day. There were boats every place you
6 looked. I mean hundreds of them, maybe more. I must admit
7 the system they were using was just like clockwork. It was so
8 efficient. I was quickly assigned to a small Higgins boat. I
9 was down in the hull with a bunch of other guys. We departed
10 at night. We crossed the channel in darkness. The invasion
11 had already started a few days before. I don't know, three,
12 four, five, something like that. I noticed in this little
13 Higgins boat that water was leaking in around the rivets. I
14 hoped we'd make it; well, we did, but I was definitely doing
15 some praying.

16 I'd imagine knowing you that you would have done the
17 same. The fellows down in the floor of the boat were not
18 engaged in prayer. They were shooting craps all the way over.
19 There was an electric light dangling down. I thought, "Man,
20 I'd like to get a picture of this."

21 Q. Did you roll the dice at all yourself?

22 A. No. I don't gamble. Not that I think there's
23 anything particularly wrong, but, you know, gambling is a
24 losing game. Well, we arrived and the scene was familiar.

1 People have seen all of this before on TV. We went from the
2 Higgins boat, into a landing craft tank, (LCT), you know,
3 where the front of it drops down. A sailor was running the
4 thing, and he brought us as close to shore as he could. The
5 shelling wasn't too bad; nothing like it was on D-Day, where
6 it was a constant thing. It was early in the morning and we
7 didn't have any enemy aircraft after us.

8 Q. Yes, sir.

9 A. We jumped in the water. I had noticed there was a
10 little guy on the beach that had a big stick. He was walking
11 back and forth. He'd hold the stick up and point. He had a
12 big dog walking with him. I was going to go by him and make
13 some remark about having sense enough to get off the beach. I
14 went by him, but I didn't make any smart remark. I saw a
15 silver star on his uniform, and discovered it was Teddy
16 Roosevelt, Jr.

17 Q. Wow.

18 A. He was a little short guy, about 5 foot 6 inches
19 tall. Unfortunately, he died from a heart attack about two
20 months after that. He later received the Medal of Honor. I
21 hated to see that, because I did say, "Good morning, General,"
22 and he replied, "Good morning. Be careful now; this place is
23 mined." They had yellow ribbons to mark our way and we stayed
24 in groups of two. We moved on in. We didn't have to go far.

1 The Germans were behind the hedgerows, and that's when the
2 fighting for me started. I mean, at least that was my first
3 introduction to that type of fighting.

4 Q. Sir, did you have any other experiences during the
5 time of the breakthrough over there?

6 A. You mean the Battle of the Bulge? Yes, I did. Many
7 that I would like to relate. But I want to go back to the
8 summer of 1944 first. For a while, I was somewhat of a Lone
9 Ranger. I had to find the First Army Headquarters G-3 (Air).
10 In the meantime, I joined other units and fought with them
11 until I found the G-3 (Air) of First Army. I got a rather
12 cool welcome. The guy didn't have time to fool with me. He
13 as much as told me that. I felt like Little Orphan Annie.
14 From June until the middle of August, I hung around the front
15 lines trying to learn as much about the situation as possible.

16 By this time we were in Paris, I got a TWX from General
17 Mead telling me to hurry home. I found my unit in France in a
18 place called "Mi Forest." It was a wooded area. I
19 immediately went to the 29th Tactical Air Command and tried to
20 get acquainted with every member of the unit. The Commanding
21 General was Major General [Elwood R.] "Pete" Quesada, who was
22 about the most flamboyant fellow in the U.S. Army Air Force.

23 I briefed General Meade on what I had been doing, what I
24 had learned, and how I intended to go about doing the job to

1 which I had been assigned. He approved of everything I said.
2 His only advice was not to become careless. I promised that I
3 wouldn't. Throughout this war I found myself alone much of
4 the time. That allowed me to operate much better than if I
5 was with a unit.

6 About the middle of September 1944, I received a letter
7 from my mother. There was no mention of Bob Fay, who was a
8 college buddy, in the letter. But there was a newspaper
9 clipping inside the envelope that related that Bob had been
10 wounded and was hospitalized. The clipping said he was with
11 the 8th Infantry Division.

12 Bob Fay was a very close friend of mine in college. He
13 was my age, but was ahead of me two years because he started
14 college right after high school. He graduated in 1940. He
15 looked after me, and helped me along with many things. He was
16 a good guy and came from a very influential, wealthy family.
17 He had a car, and we used to double date a lot. I really
18 liked him. I took him home a time or two to meet my parents.
19 He wanted to see what a coal mine was like. My dad took him
20 down into a mine. He eventually inherited his family
21 newspaper. He was the publisher, editor, and head of the
22 paper for a long time. We were drafted together in the same
23 month. He left in June, while I was delayed because I was
24 going to give the aviation thing a try. As it turned out, I

1 went the last of July. He went into the infantry. The next
2 month, I was assigned to artillery. Otherwise, we'd have been
3 together.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. I knew that the 8th Division was going into Huertgen
6 Forest. The forest was in Belgium, and it was thick. Thick
7 as can be. Moving through it was almost impossible. The
8 Germans had years to set up traps and machine gun
9 emplacements, so it was a suicidal thing to try. Higher
10 echelons had said that this place had to be taken. They
11 should have gone around it, that's been well recognized since.
12 It was a dumb thing to do, and we lost a lot of lives in the
13 effort.

14 We lost a fellow from the G-3 section of Ninth Army
15 Headquarters. I went to see General Meade—we got along very
16 well—and I told him that I had a friend in the 8th Division,
17 an infantry officer and college graduate. I asked, "Could we
18 get him?" I pleaded with him really. "General, could we get
19 this fellow to replace so-and-so."

20 Q. What was his response?

21 A. He said, "He's good, right?" and I said, "Well, yes,
22 sir." He said, "Well, all right. You go ahead and get the
23 orders issued, but if he doesn't work out, it's going to be
24 your ass." I replied, "Yes, sir." I went over to the AG's

1 office and gave him the scoop. I had Bob's serial number, and
2 I had no trouble getting the orders issued "By Command of
3 Lieutenant General Simpson." It was not going to be a
4 problem, because the Eighth Division was part of the Ninth
5 Army. I obtained a command car. I found Bob in the process
6 of setting up some mortars. The Germans were nearby. I told
7 him what I was there for, and after I said, "Bob, you're
8 transferred back to Army Headquarters. You have to go back
9 with me." "Aww," he said, "that's very nice of you, Kenny,
10 but I can't do it." He explained, "We've got an attack coming
11 in the morning. I'm getting some mortars ready, and these
12 guys need me. I appreciate it but I can't go." To which I
13 said, "Here's a lieutenant general that says you're going to
14 come back and be a part of Ninth Army Headquarters. You've
15 got to go with me, and you've got to go right now. Get your
16 stuff and put it in the command car, because, buddy, I mean
17 business. I'm not leaving here without you." I gave him a
18 couple of copies of his orders, and he took them over to
19 Division headquarters. I think inwardly he was pretty happy
20 about it, but he didn't jump with joy.

21 I took him back, and he lived out the war. He likely
22 wouldn't have otherwise, because his unit went into Huertgen
23 Forest the next day or two later, and every officer in his
24 company and half the enlisted men were killed. This really

1 hit him hard. He was depressed for a long time. His brother
2 wrote a book, and this picture is in that book. (Shows a
3 picture of him with Lt. Fay.)

4 I've got notes on what he said, and I think that it would
5 be worthwhile to read that to you.

6 Q. Sure. Sir, you mentioned Bob Faye's brother wrote a
7 book, and there was an excerpt you wanted to read. Would you
8 like to go ahead and do that?

9 A. Yes, the incident that I've just described to you,
10 Rob, is included in a book that was written by Bob's brother
11 Bill. William Louis Fay, II, is his name. He was four years
12 older than Bob; Bill was born in 1914, Bob in 1918. Bill was
13 a very distinguished man and a big time lawyer. He wrote this
14 book, *Life at Moscow Bay—Our Hundred Years Along the Illinois*
15 *River*. It is a biography of the family, and a wonderful book.
16 He put this incident in it, and he did it so well that I would
17 like to read it to you, if you don't mind.

18 Q. Not at all, sir.

19 A. He says it a lot better than I ever could. At a
20 pertinent place in the book he says:

21 To me the highlight of Bob's career was his service to
22 his country in World War II, although he rarely talked about
23 it. He joined the Army about a year before the United States
24 entered the war; a first lieutenant in the Infantry in
25 Normandy on July 9, 1944, a month and three days after D-Day.
26 He sustained a shrapnel wound in his leg. Bob soon was back
27 in action, taking command of his company after all his

1 superior officers had been killed. He was awarded the Silver
2 Star on September 6, 1944, for gallantry in combat.

3 During the campaign in Brittany, Bob's 8th Infantry
4 Division was transferred from the Third Army to the Ninth Army
5 under the command of General William H. Simpson. In the
6 autumn of 1944, Bob found himself in a veritable chamber of
7 horrors, called the Huertgen Forest, north of Ardennes in
8 eastern Belgium, 10 miles deep and laden with mines and booby
9 traps. Then, miraculously, his life was saved through the
10 timely intervention of an Illinois College buddy, Kenny
11 Crawford, a major on the Ninth Army staff. Crawford located
12 Bob through a clipping sent to him by his mother from the
13 Taylorville newspaper. The clipping described Bob's
14 hospitalization in France. Crawford wrote me as follows:

15 "I recognized Bob's unit, since it was in the Ninth Army.
16 I also knew it had been engaged in some serious fighting in
17 the Huertgen Forest, which was well fortified with Germans,
18 and, in truth, was a deathtrap. It was imperative to get Bob
19 transferred as soon as possible. I convinced my commanding
20 general that Bob would be an asset to our G-3 section. He
21 gave me permission to issue the necessary orders. Armed with
22 orders from General Bill Simpson, I took Bob out and brought
23 him back to our headquarters."

24 Always self-effacing, my brother wrote to me from Holland
25 on October 30, 1944. "I'm now back with Army Headquarters
26 working in the G-3 section and have had a bit of a time
27 getting used to it. One morning I was busy trying to get some
28 mortars into position and give Jerry a little hell, and a few
29 hours later, I was way back here sleeping in a warm, dry
30 place, eating food like a human, and shuffling papers. Dad
31 has written that you aren't too well pleased with your lack of
32 action. I hope and pray that you never get any, Will. It
33 isn't good. I think the worst thing is the tremendous fear
34 that fills a man at times. When you get up and move ahead,
35 it's not that you've conquered the fear, but you've decided
36 that you're as good as dead anyway, so you might as well go
37 ahead and get something done before your time is up. Maybe it
38 doesn't affect everybody as it did me, but there isn't anyone
39 who isn't afraid.

40 You will no doubt hear about my getting some awards. The
41 only reason I mention them is to tell you to take the
42 citations with a grain of salt. The men I fought with are
43 largely responsible for anything I might have done. I haven't
44 done anything that the regular GI doesn't do every day.'

1 Q. Yes, sir. It's very powerful.

2 A. Bob returned home in early 1946. He had married in
3 May 1943, and he and Rigi, his wife, had two daughters. His
4 ancestors established a newspaper in Jacksonville, Illinois,
5 in 1850 and it continues to thrive. Bob became business
6 manager of the paper on his return from service to his
7 country. When his father retired he became the publisher. He
8 had received the Silver Star and a Purple Heart after being
9 wounded in combat in Brest, France. He was very active in
10 community affairs. Sadly, he died at age 70 in a Florida
11 nursing home.

12 One of the nicest things that came out of this was
13 relayed to me by my wife, Madge, who knew nothing about this.
14 She got a call from the Fays. They asked her to come up and
15 spend a long weekend with them. Madge wasn't certain what was
16 going on but, she knew that Bob and I were good friends. She
17 went to Jacksonville, and was treated like a queen; dinner at
18 the country club, meeting all these prominent people. The
19 Fays were among the leading socialites of the town. They were
20 exceedingly nice, and it did me a lot of good, to see that
21 Madge had this experience. Whether she ever caught on as to
22 why, I don't know. I think she knew the story later on.

23 One last thing about this incident. When I got home—
24 after I was discharged from the Army in 1945—I told my

1 mother: "You know that clipping you sent me about Bob Fay? I
2 said, "Mom, let me tell you what happened as a result of
3 that." She looked puzzled and said, "What clipping? I didn't
4 send you any clipping."

5 Q. Really, now that's what you call fate.

6 A. She never changed her mind, either. I finally gave
7 up trying to figure it out. She denied that—she remembered
8 the letter, but denied sending a clipping. She said that she
9 didn't put anything in it. You know, it was something to
10 ponder

11 Q. When did you return from overseas, sir?

12 A. The war ended in May of '45. We then went to
13 Deauville, France, and stayed there for a couple of months. We
14 were working on plans for our next invasion—Japan. Of course,
15 we had no way of knowing that the war would end as it did. At
16 first, we thought, at least, that we would invade the
17 Philippines, and to take that country away from the Japanese.
18 That was changed, and the next thing I heard was that we would
19 be going into Japan and invade the mainland. I think that
20 would have been pretty horrific because the Japanese would
21 have resisted to the end, to the last man and woman. Later, I
22 learned that orders had been changed again, and we were to go
23 to China and join up with Chiang Kai-shek's forces.

1 Incidentally, it was during this period that I met
2 Marlene Dietrich. She was a beautiful woman. She was a good
3 friend of General Bill Simpson's and spent time with us. I
4 talked to her several times.

5 Q. Yes, sir.

6 A. In August, we were given a month of leave. I went
7 home for a month. I was fully prepared to return to combat in
8 September—in the Far East. But as you know, the atomic
9 weapons were dropped, and that ended it. I was delighted. I
10 wanted to get out of the Army as fast as I could. I loved it,
11 but I did not want to be forced out. I heard about this
12 RIF'ing—"reduction in force"—and I didn't want to get into
13 anything where you might have a job today and you don't have
14 one tomorrow. I had not yet finished my education and that
15 was Number One on my priority list. The first thing I had to
16 do was get my bachelor's degree out of the way.

17 Q. Yes, sir.

18 A. I'd taken many courses through correspondence.
19 These were called USAFE courses. They'd send you a book, and
20 you would study it. Next comes the examination. A senior
21 officer supervises your work and signs that everything was on
22 the up and up. I got straight A's in that stuff; it was a
23 cinch. I racked up at least a dozen courses like that. But I
24 still needed more to finish off that last year. One thing

1 that was frustrating was that when I'd get an "A" in a
2 course, it would get reduced to a "C" on my transcript at
3 Illinois College.

4 Q. Why would they do that, sir?

5 A. I don't know.

6 In any event, my wife taught school near her home in
7 Anna, Illinois. They were just starting the last term of the
8 year at Southern Illinois University, which was—and is—a
9 good school. It was twenty miles from where my wife lived.
10 We had saved up \$10,000, and I planned to use it to finance my
11 education.

12 Q. Wow, that's pretty impressive.

13 A. In those days, you could buy a good house with that
14 amount of money. We planned to buy a house later. First it
15 was all about getting an education. I enrolled at Southern
16 Illinois University in Carbondale, and took some very
17 interesting courses. I did very well with my grades. All of
18 this coursework was transferred to Illinois College, and I had
19 more than enough hours to earn my degree. I was listed with
20 the class of 1942, but actually my degree was awarded in May
21 of '46 or June of '46. Immediately after receiving it, I
22 enrolled in Washington University Law School in St. Louis.
23 Bill Webster, who became the FBI Director and subsequently

1 headed the CIA, was a classmate. He was also a Federal judge.
2 I got to know him very well later on.

3 Q. Sir, what was your bachelor's degree in?

4 A. Economics.

5 Q. You stayed with economics throughout your course of
6 study?

7 A. Yes. The reason that I majored in economics was
8 that it didn't require a lot of extra work. By this I mean
9 that science majors had lab requirements. I just didn't have
10 time for that. But I thought: "What am I going to do with an
11 economics degree?" I reasoned that a law degree would fit
12 nicely. Washington University had a two-year law school
13 program, and I had the money to finance two years. So that
14 was a good fit. Madge found a job teaching in St. Louis, and
15 we had a nice little apartment, so everything was pretty rosy.
16 However, I didn't feel that comfortable. I didn't think I
17 really understood the lecturers; I didn't feel I was really
18 mastering what they were saying.

19 Q. Right.

20 A. I had to do something, I figured, about really
21 grasping this stuff and knowing that I've got it. Well, that
22 came later. I was sitting in class in August listening to a
23 guy named Professor Carnahan talk about criminal law. I
24 wasn't too happy with that course at the time. Someone handed

1 me a telegram. I don't know how it was delivered to the
2 school, because it was addressed to my home. It was from the
3 Department of the Army and said that I was invited to return
4 to active service as a Regular Army officer.

5 When I was discharged from the Army at Fort Sheridan,
6 Illinois, in 1945, a recruiting sergeant had approached me
7 with a piece of paper and said: "Sir, this is an application
8 for the Regular Army. Would you mind signing it?" I said,
9 "Well, it won't make any difference, I'm not interested in
10 active duty because I'm going back to college". He said,
11 "Well, sir, if you are offered a Regular commission as a
12 result of this application, you can always turn it down. You
13 have nothing to lose." I said, "Sure, let me sign that." I
14 signed this application for a commission in the Regular Army,
15 and in about two minutes, I was on my way. I quickly forgot
16 about it.

17 Q. Yes, sir.

18 A. Little thing, but a life-changing proposition.

19 Q. Right.

20 A. I talked to Madge about it. I had to convince her
21 and promise her that there would be no separation. I reasoned
22 that we had been apart so much that the Army wouldn't possibly
23 do that to me again, but they did as it turned out. I dropped

1 out of law school, came back into the Regular Army, and was
2 sent to Fort Lewis, Washington.

3 We took off. Now, at least college is out of the way as
4 I've got my degree. We went to Fort Lewis, and had nice
5 quarters and I had a good job. Everything worked fine, and
6 things were going just great. At that time, I was assigned as
7 a special service officer; this was because of all my time
8 playing baseball and boxing and other sports.

9 Q. Were you still playing sports at that time, or were
10 you mainly coaching and mentoring?

11 A. Both. I was young enough—I was 27 years of age—so
12 I was participating. But I didn't do anymore boxing. I mean,
13 maybe for exercise and working out, but no bouts. That was
14 the end of that.

15 Q. Sounds like a pretty good job to come back into.

16 A. It was, and I was made a special service officer a
17 couple of times after that as well. Anyway, I was back in the
18 service and just loved it. I always did anyway. It was a
19 great relief; it was a good job, and it was permanent. It
20 came as a real shock to then receive orders for the
21 Philippines. Worse was finding out that dependents were not
22 permitted. I thought my wife was going to divorce me. She
23 cried. I felt terrible. I promised her, "Listen, don't
24 worry, because I'll get out of there, and I'll get someplace

1 where we can be together." I protested at the time. Some
2 jerk said, "If you don't like it, quit. Resign." Well, I had
3 a good case and probably should have fought it through, but I
4 didn't. I didn't have time

5 Looking back I can see that I should have appealed. You
6 should speak up when you feel you are being treated unfairly.
7 If I had it to do over again, I'd do a lot of protesting and
8 get help from others who were highly placed. Anyway, I wound
9 up at Camp Camarillo, just outside Manila, a short time later.

10 Manila was nice in those days. It had a romantic flavor
11 about it. It was clean and safe. Years later, I did some
12 teaching over there, and it had unfortunately deteriorated
13 terribly, which is very sad. I wondered how was I going to
14 get out of this place? Surely, there's got to be a way, I
15 thought. Then I found out that Frank Smith Kilpatrick was in
16 Japan. He was the guy that got me that promotion in about a
17 month and never did know about what I'd pulled as the
18 personnel adjutant.

19 Q. Yes, sir.

20 A. We had stayed close friends and I wrote to him about
21 this terrible situation. He called me and said: "We could
22 sure use you up here and I can get orders issued, but what's
23 your commanding general going to say? Have you talked to
24 him." "No," I said, "but he won't care." This was after

1 about only 6 months on this new job. All at once there came a
2 wire (TWX), and it said that General Ryder, Commanding
3 General, IX Corps, would like to have Major Kenneth Crawford
4 transferred to Japan. But it also said: "He advises us that
5 the commanding general has no objections."

6 Q. That sounds a little problematic.

7 A. My CG in the Philippines didn't even know about it.
8 When the G-1 saw the wire from Japan, he found me out in the
9 field and said, "Pal, you're in big trouble." My reaction
10 surprised me. It didn't worry me, really. I thought the hell
11 with it. I'm not going to tolerate this being separated from
12 my wife any longer. I wasn't sorry I'd done it. I said,
13 "Well, I'll go talk to him. I'll explain." I felt my cause
14 was just. However, we had a chief of staff that was a
15 martinet. He was just terrible. He treated us like we were
16 plebes of some sort. "Reply by endorsement hereon;" explain
17 the most minor thing. That was his stupid style of
18 leadership. This man needed training in how to deal with
19 people, but I bet he never got it and he thought of himself as
20 a military genius.

21 I went to see the general. I was going to explain why I
22 did what I did. He was very gracious. He greeted me nicely.
23 I said, "General, I'm sorry about what happened. I know I
24 didn't handle it right." He said, "Stop right there." He

1 added, "You know, if I could get out of here like you've
2 managed, I'd do the same thing." He said, "I'd love to get to
3 Japan." He added, "Don't think anything of it. Go ahead.
4 Good luck. God bless you." That's the kind of leader you
5 want and need at the top of your organization.

6 Q. Do you recall which general that was, sir?

7 A. You know, right now I forget his name. But to my
8 knowledge he didn't gain any renown. As far as I'm concerned,
9 he should have been the Chief of Staff of the Army. I didn't
10 hear much about him later on. My concern was now with our
11 chief of staff, and how I was going to handle him. I thought
12 for sure that he would try to knife me in some way. He was
13 one of these guys that was riding horses all the time after
14 work. The old Army.

15 I went down to the paddock where they keep the horses. I
16 knew he'd come in about 5:30 p.m. I waited and then as he
17 tied up his horse, I walked up through the paddock to where he
18 was standing. I think he was all set to chew me out again.
19 But before he could say anything, I stuck my hand through the
20 fence. I said, "Colonel, I'll be leaving, but I didn't want
21 to leave without saying good-bye and thanking you for all you
22 did for me, and I hope we can stay in touch." It was untrue
23 but I said it. I had my fingers crossed. He didn't have much

1 to say after that, except he may have muttered "Good luck."
2 He knew, of course, the general's reaction was to let me go.

3 Q. I imagine so, sir.

4 A. Shortly thereafter, I am in lovely Japan. The first
5 thing I did was to obtain orders to bring my wife over on the
6 next boat. We were one happy couple. I was once again
7 assigned as the Command Special Service Officer. But this
8 time it was a big deal because the chief of staff, Colonel
9 Charles Royce, a West Point graduate, was a baseball nut. He
10 proclaimed: "First thing I want," he said, "is" (and he was
11 speaking for the CG too) "a winning baseball team." All the
12 large U.S. Army commands throughout Japan had teams and they
13 were first rate.

14 Q. Yes, sir.

15 A. We had major league parks, thanks to the Japanese
16 love of baseball. The league was probably as good as any
17 minor league in the US. I was with IX Corps and I had to get
18 a team ready to play in the league, which I did. As I
19 mentioned earlier, I had some wonderful players, one of which
20 was a guy named Ralph DeKemper, who was 95 years old on last
21 Christmas day. He lives in Charlotte, North Carolina. He was
22 my next in command, and is a really super guy. Another player
23 was a fellow by the name of Carlicinni, a dentist. He was a
24 very talented young player just out of dental school. He

1 played shortstop. I had some college players; I had all kinds
2 of guys. Overall, we had a good ball team. Surprisingly
3 enough, I was hitting better than when I had played in college
4 or when I tried to make the minors. I was also throwing well,
5 and doing everything better. I guess I needed maturity. The
6 chief of staff, Royce, wanted me to play all the time. He'd
7 come down to the games and it'd be a tight moment. The batter
8 would have maybe two strikes on him, and Colonel Royce would
9 tell me to go in and hit for the batter. You can do that, you
10 know. A new batter can come in and take that last strike, so
11 Royce would want me in there. In his defense, I think I was
12 hitting around 400. We had our own private railroad car for
13 traveling and sleeping. First class accommodations.

14 Q. So you received VIP treatment?

15 A. The baseball team did. That helped us attract a lot
16 of good players. As the Special Services Officer, however, I
17 had my share of problems. I had inherited a small group of
18 actors. It was a foolish idea, so I eventually got rid of
19 them. They were supposed to put on plays and shows for the
20 troops. Somebody had sold somebody that bill of goods before
21 I arrived, probably another actor. These were good-looking,
22 attractive, likeable people, but they contributed little to
23 our organization. I remember what ultimately lead to their
24 dismissal. One night they refused to perform the play because

1 the leading lady had torn her fingernail, and refused to get
2 on the stage. That was the straw that broke the camel's back.
3 I fired them all; got rid of them; got them out of there
4 pronto. If Congress had heard of this I think we would have
5 been embarrassed.

6 I also had an island named Matsumoto added to my list of
7 responsibilities. My predecessor had done nothing to develop
8 it. It was a beautiful place. I assigned Major Jim Sutton to
9 the project, and he turned it into a beautiful place. We had
10 a boat to take us back and forth. It was just an ideal place.
11 People would go out there and picnic, whatever, do all kinds
12 of things. It was a lot of fun, but I was busy with baseball
13 because Colonel Royce pressed me to play baseball much of the
14 time. I finally told him I couldn't play baseball and keep
15 doing all my other assigned responsibilities. He got a little
16 frustrated with me. He talked to the G-1, Colonel Stu
17 Beckley, but nothing ever happened and I never got help. I
18 was still determined to get as much education as I possibly
19 could. This was about the time that law school came back into
20 the picture.

21 Q. Yes, sir.

22 A. I wasn't going to be satisfied until I had all the
23 education I felt I needed. I found out about courses being
24 offered that I could apply for and possibly attend. The first

1 one that I recall applying for was for a Masters in
2 Psychology. Fortunately, I received a letter informing me
3 that I hadn't been in Japan long enough to apply for that
4 program. A few months later, I saw a flyer for law school
5 application. I figured why not, and put in my application. I
6 thought that I wouldn't get it either because I hadn't been in
7 Japan long enough. However, this time the guy doing the
8 selecting was a different person, or maybe the rules were
9 different, or both. I think it was Major General Ted Decker,
10 then serving as the Army Judge Advocate General, who made the
11 choice. Only fifteen were chosen. I was one of the fortunate
12 selectees.

13 Q. Why do you think you were chosen sir?

14 A. I think what really made the difference in my
15 application was that I had gone a little while to Washington
16 University's law program on my own. I think this indicated
17 that I was serious about being a lawyer. I hadn't met General
18 Decker at that time, because I was not a judge advocate. Now
19 I had to try and determine what school would be best for me.
20 I could pick any of them, but it had to be a good one. I'd
21 been through Charlottesville before on a bus. I was very
22 impressed with this beautiful city, the nearby mountains, and
23 I thought what a great place this would be to live. Madge and
24 I were also thinking that we ought to start our family soon.

1 So I chose the University of Virginia. This turned out to be
2 a plus for the Army too, because they had a contract with UVA
3 whereby the cost per student was less than at other schools.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. To make a long story short, UVA looked into my
6 background and naturally checked out all my grades. The
7 authorities checked with Dean Ernst Hildner of Illinois
8 College about my academic performance. He wrote UVA a letter
9 that said: "Crawford took many these courses elsewhere, and
10 he got As in all of them. Our policy, however, was to change
11 each such grade to a C. If we hadn't done that, Crawford
12 would have been in the top 10 percent of his class."

13 Fast forward to 1970: Just before I retired from the
14 Army, I received a letter from Illinois College asking me to
15 come back at commencement time—the following May or June.
16 The College wanted to give me an honorary doctorate.

17 Q. That's exciting.

18 A. I did as requested and returned around commencement
19 time. My honorary doctorate was awarded by the Ambassador
20 from Germany, Rolf Pauls. He'd been a major in the German
21 Army, and had lost an arm during the war. We had quite a
22 reunion over our wartime experiences. Anyhow, I never figured
23 out why they awarded it to me.

1 Governor Ed Johnson was also a recipient of a doctorate
2 at that time. He'd just been named the Governor of the United
3 Nations Trust Territory in the Pacific. He asked me if I
4 would consider accepting the position of attorney general of
5 the Territory. I said, "Fine, I'd do it," but one thing after
6 another happened and we never got around to it. Not that I
7 didn't accept it or it was withdrawn. Something happened in
8 Washington that changed things. That would have been
9 interesting. I'm sorry it didn't work out.

10 Q. Yes, sir.

11 A. It was idyllic to be in Japan in those days. We had
12 a nice little home, and a lot of wonderful friends. I liked
13 my job. It was a lot of fun. We wanted to start a family.
14 Madge got pregnant, happy days! Then Ralph DeKemper's wife
15 got pregnant, and Charlie Howe, another buddy, his wife got
16 pregnant all around the same time. We all wanted boys. I got
17 a boy; Ralph got a boy; but Charlie had a girl. So I remember
18 there was a lot of kidding about that. She grew up to be a
19 blessing and a joy.

20 Ralph went on to have some girls, but Jim was the only
21 child for us. Charlie got boys later on too, so that was
22 wonderful. I repeat, Japan was a delightful place to live.
23 We had a wonderful cook, and a houseboy. He was a handsome
24 young man and took care of us hand and foot. were in Japan

1 for 2 years, and then came back early so I could begin law
2 school.

3 Q. Yes, sir.

4 A. I was accepted and had to report at UVA on a certain
5 date in September 1948. This information all came to me quite
6 a bit before Jim was born. I told Madge, "You're going to
7 have to have this kid on time, because I've got to be there,
8 and if you don't, I'll go off and leave you." She believed
9 that, you see, or acted like she did.

10 Q. You put her on a schedule, sir?

11 A. She had that baby right on time. I kept telling her
12 I wanted a boy and I got a boy. I told her, "You did great."
13 Thankfully, she had no trouble at all with the birth, but did
14 unfortunately experience a little bout of depression that
15 follows sometimes. I took her to Anna, Illinois, to be with
16 her parents for awhile. Being with her mother and dad was a
17 great help. I could get going in law school. The arrangement
18 pleased all concerned.

19 I drove from Illinois to Virginia. I got in on a Sunday
20 night. Law school started the next day. It was the first
21 Monday in September 1948. It was about 8 o'clock on Sunday
22 night when I came wheeling into UVA.

23 I went straight to Clark Hall as instructed. No one was
24 around except a young man staring at the bulletin board. I

1 said, "Are you a first-year man?" He said, "Yes." I said,
2 "Well, I am too." I said, "What do we do?" He said, "Well,
3 all we can do is come back in the morning before 8, sign in
4 and register. We'll be in the contracts course. The students
5 are sorted alphabetically, with the first half of the alphabet
6 in one room, and the other half in another. I said: "As long
7 as we're going to be classmates, let me introduce myself. I'm
8 Ken Crawford." He said, "I'm Bob Kennedy."

9 Q. The Bobby Kennedy?

10 A. Yes, the one and only. That didn't mean much of
11 anything in those days. At that time, Jack Kennedy was a
12 representative in Congress, but that wasn't really a big deal.
13 And I said: "Are you related to the Ambassador to Great
14 Britain?" That's the only Kennedy I could think of. He said,
15 "That's my dad," and I thought that must be pretty nice. He
16 was a good guy.

17 Bob Kennedy and I started to study together. The school
18 people recommended that study groups should consist of six
19 people. We did as suggested. The professors would indicate
20 when something was important, and I kept a red pen and made
21 sure I wrote that down. Then I'd type this stuff up for my
22 group. I had to use carbon paper in those days to make the
23 copies. We met every Saturday, sometimes more often than
24 that, especially before an exam. Any of us could call a

1 session. Before exams—we'd get together pretty often. It
2 was all business when we were in these sessions. Bob was
3 running up to Manhattan where Ethel was a student. He missed
4 a lot of weekends. Hyannis Port was his home. He made some
5 trips to visit his family. My schedule was go to class from 8
6 to 11; then I would be free to study for the rest of the day.
7 Bob started dropping by about every day when he was in town.
8 He would discuss the various sessions we had attended that
9 day. I produced an outline to cover all classes.

10 Q. That seems to be a pretty decent schedule, sir.

11 A. I'd come home and have lunch after class and then go
12 right to studying until about 4:30. After that I'd go to the
13 gym. We'd work out every day, played a lot of handball and
14 racquetball. I would have dinner at 7, and then I was back to
15 studying until 11. I held to that schedule. One night a week
16 we'd go out to dinner or some affair. I encouraged my wife to
17 make friends among the ladies, which she did. She often
18 played bridge. I was a built-in babysitter. She could go
19 anyplace she wanted. I was going to be right there, you see.
20 This slowed down any complaining on her part. I was
21 determined to get the most out of this opportunity. It went
22 pretty well. I was getting good grades and helping others as
23 well. The more I helped my buddies, the more I learned.

1 They were all grateful and good guys. Bob Kennedy told
2 me several times that if there was anything he could ever do
3 for me, just let him know. He kept his word, but I didn't ask
4 any favors. I also started thinking ahead to what I'd do when
5 I got out of the Army. I was going to be about 51 or 52 years
6 old. Still fairly young. I thought I'd like to be a law
7 professor or dean of a law school, one or the other.

8 Q. During the summers or breaks from law school, what
9 was your military commitment?

10 A. There wasn't any. We were encouraged to go with a
11 law firm during the 3 months we were off, which I did. My
12 mother wanted me to come home, which would have been nice, but
13 I knew I was going to take the Virginia bar exam so I thought
14 it would be prudent to get some local experience. I got a
15 non-paying job in Charlottesville, Virginia, with one of the
16 local firms. They were nice guys, but they didn't give me a
17 thing to do. I dusted the books; I had a car so I chauffeured
18 them around and was a flunky. Nice fellows, but I got
19 absolutely nothing out of it as far as somebody showing me the
20 ropes—but I didn't mind the rest either. I did take piano
21 lessons, but I found that I was as bad at that as ever.

22 Q. Yes, sir.

23 A. My wife would take a month off, usually in the
24 summer, and she and Jimmy would go home to visit her mom and

1 dad. They were very close, and the old folks wanted Jimmy
2 there all the time. During these times, a few of us got into
3 the habit of running up to New York. I would go in uniform.
4 Usually we would go to Leon & Eddie's and The Stork Club.

5 I was treated like a king, because they thought I was a
6 Korean War veteran. I wore a lot of ribbons from World War
7 II. I met movie stars in those places. I never paid for a
8 drink in either one of them. We had a lot of fun. The
9 managers would always give me ashtrays. I'd bring them back
10 with me and give them away.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. They were black with big white letters on the sides:
13 The Stork Club or Leon & Eddie's. I had a few at home. One
14 day my wife picked up one from the Stork Club and said,
15 "What's this?" "That's an ashtray," I said. "I know it's an
16 ashtray, stupid, but where did you get it?" "It's from the
17 Stork Club," I said. "How'd you get it?" she repeated. Then
18 I told her, "I went up there." She wanted to go there too so
19 I arranged for us to do so. We always had a great time when we
20 did. We'd also go over to Jack Dempsey's place sometimes. We
21 saw some plays. The people were surprisingly very friendly.

22 Q. You mentioned going to New York in your uniform,
23 were there any other military members at UVA with you?

1 A. There were five of us. The most senior guy was a
2 lieutenant colonel, Bob Williams. He later got a star. The
3 one thing that irritated me about him was that Bob was a self-
4 appointed leader. It wasn't long before he was telling us
5 what to do. I told him he couldn't do that, which he didn't
6 like. Things were a little cool with us after that. I
7 couldn't have one of my classmates telling me what to do and
8 what not to do. That was over the top. Bill Francisco was
9 another student here with me. He later died of cancer in San
10 Antonio around 1992, about the same time I moved down to the
11 retirement place there. It's called Air Force Village II.

12 Q. Yes, sir.

13 A. The third classmate was Earl Brown. All three were
14 West Point graduates. I didn't study with any of the Army
15 guys though. I was closer friends with some of the other
16 students, as it turned out. Earl later passed away from
17 cancer, up in New Hampshire. The fourth of the group was Pete
18 Manson. Pete resigned from the Army and joined the UVA
19 faculty. He was very popular. He died on April 12, 2009, at
20 his home in Charlottesville. He was 91 years old.

21 Q. Let me ask you about your study group, specifically
22 your relationship with Bobby Kennedy.

23 A. I got to know Bob like a brother. I liked him. I'm
24 sure he liked me, because he would tease me all the time. Bob

1 liked to come up with quips, and then you were expected to
2 come back with a witty response. For instance, he'd say
3 things like this: "Well, Benny, you did pretty good that
4 time," or something like that. Then I'd say, "Who you calling
5 Benny? Who's Benny?" He'd come back with, "Oh, your name's
6 not Benny?" "Hell no, it's not Benny; it's Kenny," I'd say.
7 He always pulled stuff like that.

8 I teased Bob a lot and he'd tease me. For example, I met
9 Bob and Ethel in Seoul, Korea in 1963. When he got off the
10 plane, he said: "I knew you would be in charge and running
11 things." That was in front of my boss, General Howze, who was
12 a four star general, the press, the Korean Cabinet, and half
13 of Seoul.

14 At a meeting that followed Bob's arrival, General Howze
15 gave him a classified, private briefing. After he finished,
16 Bob wanted me to critique what General Howze had said.
17 Fortunately, Howze thought Bob's request was funny. Bob tried
18 to get me to disagree with what Howze had said. I wouldn't do
19 it.

20 There was another incident that I thought was funny. As
21 background, one would have to know that after graduation from
22 law school, Bob Kennedy got a job. Senator Joe McCarthy of
23 Wisconsin, a family friend, was named to chair the Permanent
24 Subcommittee on Investigations of the Senate Government

1 Operations Committee. McCarthy had previously hired Roy M.
2 Cohn as his chief counsel. Bob was offered the job as
3 assistant chief counsel. Unfortunately for Bob, this meant he
4 reported to Cohn. The fellows disliked each other very much.

5 Roy, who was the son of Judge Albert Cohn of New York's
6 Supreme Court, was an avowed homosexual, and this caused or
7 helped the mutual dislike. Occasionally, I would see or talk
8 to Bob on the phone. At any rate, I had heard of the rift
9 between Roy Cohn and Bob, and asked Bob about it. He changed
10 the subject, but I kept after him until he gave me the answer.
11 He finally told me that so-and-so Cohn told someone else that
12 he (Bob) was 'cute kid.' Bob was not amused at all, but I
13 thought it was funny.

14 In October 1998, C. David Heymann published a book titled
15 "RFK." He quoted me on pages 70-71 with regard to this
16 incident. When Heymann interviewed me, I had a lot of nice
17 and complimentary things to say about Bob. Heymann did not
18 use any of them. All he used from what I told him was the
19 'cute kid' incident.

20 Back to Bob. He graduated right smack dab in the middle
21 of our class of 156. But that was okay with him.

22 Q. Where did you finish, sir?

23 A. I made Order of the Coif, which is the upper 10
24 percent, but no one ever told me where I stood and it wasn't

1 published. Somebody once told me I was fifth, but I don't
2 know. The school didn't say anything, and I never had the
3 courage to go in there and ask. I didn't much care. Still
4 don't.

5 Q. At what point did you decide you wanted to get into
6 law?

7 A. I think when I realized that economics wasn't going
8 to do it. It really wasn't a good background for anything.
9 Well, certainly not for medicine or science, but for law, you
10 see, it was a stepping stone. I had done all right in those
11 courses and also delighted in the give and take I experienced
12 when assigned to special courts in the service. I loved to
13 argue and thought I'd be a litigator, if I'd gone with a
14 private firm. I did very well on my feet, really enjoyed
15 cross-examination, and faired particularly well as a
16 prosecutor. I loved to do that.

17 Q. During law school, you mentioned you worked out
18 every day. Did you play any sports during that time?

19 A. Yes. Well, it would have to be sports that didn't
20 take a lot of equipment or a lot of time. Handball was a
21 great favorite, and also racquetball. I'd never played either
22 one of them before. The guys from the Northeast had; cold
23 weather drove them all inside, I guess; they were very good at
24 it. Most of them could beat me.

1 Q. Yes, sir.

2 A. We had a fellow named Endicott Peabody Davison who
3 was a champion player and an outstanding fellow. He was
4 Yale's football captain just before he came to law school. He
5 was built like a Greek god, and looked like one. I studied
6 with him some, but he wasn't in my regular group.
7 Nonetheless, I was very fond of him. He married a sweet girl,
8 named Janie Ingles. There was an experience that I should
9 tell you about.

10 I had an apartment the first year, and then I rented a
11 house the second and third year. That worked out a lot better
12 for us. Cottie and Janie lived in an apartment just across
13 the hall from us the first year.

14 Q. Yes, sir.

15 A. I was tired of studying one night—this was before
16 Madge arrived—and we decided to go to a movie. I knocked on
17 their door and said, "Do you want to—how about going to the
18 movie, you guys?" They answered, "No; we can't make it
19 tonight." I went by myself. This was September, '48, and
20 Eisenhower was running for President against Taft. In the
21 newsreel—before the movie, which they unfortunately don't
22 have today—Taft and his wife, Martha, were making some
23 political speeches. Mrs. Taft kept saying, "Now when Bob is

1 President; when Bob is elected President." Well, I know it
2 seems stupid, but it irritated me a little bit.

3 Q. Right, sir.

4 A. I came back home and Cottie heard me open the door
5 to the apartment building. He called out to me, "Come on in
6 and have a beer. How was the movie?" "Well, it was pretty
7 good," I replied, but in the news reel—this woman just got on
8 my nerves. He asked, "Who was that?" I said, "Martha Taft.
9 She kept yakking about when Bob gets to be President, Bob
10 this, Bob that, you know, as though it's a foregone
11 conclusion, and you know Eisenhower's going to win." I was
12 just spouting off, when I shouldn't have. Janie popped up
13 with, "Kenny, Aunt Martha's not like that at all." I said,
14 "What?" She said, "It's my aunt that you're talking about.
15 My dad, Dave Ingles, is his campaign manager." I said,
16 "Goodnight." She answered, "No, you come on back here. It's
17 all right." I apologized profusely. That taught me a
18 valuable lesson. If you don't know who you're talking to,
19 then don't talk. I've had to laugh about that for years, but
20 I'd learned another good lesson.

21 Q. Yes, sir.

22 A. They were grand neighbors and good friends. Cottie
23 died of a brain tumor, which was very sad, but I still hear

1 from Janie. She's up in Lime, Connecticut, living on a big
2 estate. They were very wealthy people.

3 Law school went along swimmingly. As I mentioned, I made
4 Coif, although I'd never heard of it before I came to
5 Virginia. I was very surprised that I was one of those
6 selected, with only 10 percent of the class eligible. What
7 percentage of them actually got it, I don't remember. You'd
8 think 15 would be eligible from a class of 156, but it didn't
9 seem to be that many people were selected; maybe a dozen, 10,
10 something like that. Justice Brennan came down to
11 Charlottesville for our presentation. We had a luncheon, and
12 he presented us with the Coif, this little key, you know. I
13 had mine made into a tie tack, put it on a little chain and it
14 holds my tie. It's quite attractive and I was delighted to
15 get it. The next day I received a bill for twenty-five bucks
16 for it, but that was all right. I had a splendid time talking
17 with Justice Brennan.

18 Q. What was your toughest course in law school?

19 A. Well, let's see, probably one with Emerson Spies.
20 Did you ever hear of him? He was one of the biggie
21 instructors here. He taught some of the property courses that
22 were pretty tough. The one that gave me the most trouble is
23 on the tip of my tongue, but, oh, I don't know. Honestly, I
24 didn't think any of them were too easy.

1 Q. Yet you managed to do quite well?

2 A. Well, I had good grades. I was always 3.5 or
3 something like that. In a way, my grades were rather
4 surprising, because I was pretty worried how I would handle
5 competing with fellows coming straight from college who were
6 used to studying. I eventually figured out that I could
7 compete, if I really worked hard. I thought, well, for 9
8 months out of the year for 3 years, I could stand on my head
9 if I had to. I dug right in and did quite well, fortunately.

10 Q. How would you say UVA law school compared to
11 Washington?

12 A. Oh, it was much better. I don't think there was any
13 comparison. They talk about the others: Harvard and Yale,
14 but I tell you—later on, when I worked at the Federal
15 Judicial Center after I retired from the Army, I used to hire
16 Harvard instructors to instruct judges. As a result of that,
17 I got to know quite a bit about Harvard and its teaching and
18 its professors, and I'd still take UVA anytime.

19 Q. Yes, sir.

20 A. Did you ever hear of Arthur Miller? Not the
21 playwright named Arthur Miller, but this guy, he is the one,
22 whether you know it or not, that inspired the movie "Paper
23 Chase." He was a fantastically strict instructor, and the
24 story is built around his personality. I got to know this guy

1 really well, and I'll tell you a little story involving him.
2 He taught the freshmen or the first-year courses. He had
3 about 200 students in this amphitheater, and he was really
4 tough on his students. This is the theme in "Paper Chase,"
5 where this fellow Houseman, an older man, played the role of
6 Miller. The real Art Miller is much younger than that actor.
7 The story told to me by one of his students, which I later
8 confirmed with Miller, starts out with a character named
9 Costello. This guy was a hood, and Miller had been putting it
10 to him pretty hard. I am using the name Costello, but it
11 could have been another hood. Let's just say that it's
12 Costello.

13 Q. Okay, sir.

14 A. Miller was really putting this guy over the coals,
15 about all the bad things that he had done. One day as the
16 students were all seated and class was ready to begin; this
17 gorgeous, dark-headed, tall woman—with a rose in her hair—
18 walked down to the middle row. She was very suave and made
19 her way through the aisle to sit down in the one empty seat
20 which was in the middle of the room. She sat down and Miller
21 started the class. He was saying some pretty bad things about
22 Costello. He had gone on about 30 minutes when the gal stands
23 up, wiggling as she rose. Every eye in the house was on her,
24 and you could have heard a pin drop. She pointed her finger

1 at Miller and says, "Costello say he be in touch." And with
2 that, she made her way out of the classroom. Bedlam breaks
3 out, of course.

4 The question everyone was pondering is: Was this for
5 real? Was she actually sent by this guy? No, she was a
6 Broadway actress, hired by a group of the students to do this.
7 Miller thought telling me this story was just the funniest
8 thing in the world. He loved that sort of thing, and the
9 students were good at that. They would do things like that at
10 Virginia, every now and then.

11 Q. It sounds like a good time, sir.

12 A. College could be a lot of fun. Well, anyways, we
13 had a grand bunch of fellows and ladies. We had several women
14 in our class. John Warner was here about the time I was, as
15 was Bowie Kuhn. The class of '51 has given more money than
16 any other class, and it's led the league for some time. And
17 it's all because of a fellow named Jim Slaughter who gave them
18 like a million a year, or something like that. How he does
19 it, I don't know.

20 Bob Kennedy, was the head of the student council. They
21 appointed him to that position because he knew everybody. I
22 was recipient of a lot of nice things that came out of that.
23 JFK would come down to see his brother, as would Teddy and his
24 dad. Ralph Bunch was one of the speakers. Bob could get them

1 here just by asking them to come down and give us a lecture.
2 Bother Jack came down, and I found him to be very friendly. I
3 think Bob had said we studied together, which broke the ice.
4 He was very nice to me and I remember one time I was standing
5 by him, and for some reason, I put my hand on his back. I
6 don't think we were taking a picture because I don't have
7 pictures with him, but I felt this heavy corset under his
8 shirt that he was wearing. That was when I realized then just
9 how bad his back must have been. He had Jackie with him.
10 They weren't married yet. She was one of the prettiest women
11 that I'd ever seen in my life.

12 Q. I can imagine, sir.

13 A. We were seated on the front row as Jack was giving
14 this talk. My wife was on the right, but I found myself
15 glancing over at Jackie to see how pretty she was. Every time
16 I'd look, I'd see her big brown eyes looking back at me. It
17 got a little embarrassing, so I cut it out. She talked in a
18 little voice, and was an absolute sweetheart.

19 Q. Who were your other close friends during your time
20 in law school?

21 A. Madge and I had many friends and I was very close to
22 the guys I studied with that we talked about before. One
23 thing to note is that while I was at Illinois College, I
24 couldn't really go to any functions because I was working all

1 the time. When we got to Virginia, I said to Madge, "Look, we
2 missed every football game in Jacksonville. As long as we are
3 here, let's make every one of them." That was our goal, and
4 we didn't miss any games. We lived near the stadium took
5 advantage of it. We got the old college spirit and felt like
6 teenagers again.

7 Q. Yes, sir.

8 A. I acquired another close friend. He was an All-
9 American football player named Joe Palumbo. Bill Dudley had
10 been selected as an All-American a few years earlier. Joe was
11 the second UVA player to be selected. Joe was a campus hero,
12 and a great guy. We became very fast friends, and still are
13 today. I hear from Joe regularly.

14 Q. Who was your favorite professor?

15 A. I mentioned Professor Nash, but there were a lot of
16 others. I don't remember any that I could say I disliked. I
17 guess there were some I liked better than others.

18 Q. Do you feel that attending law school post World War
19 II impacted your drive or determination to excel as a student?

20 A. Yes, I think it did, because for one thing, I was 29
21 years old when I entered UVA. I remember getting kidded about
22 my age sometimes. Some asked if I knew Lincoln. I could see
23 time was moving so fast that I had to get with it. I think
24 age definitely had something to do with it. I was 32 when I

1 graduated and felt that I was behind where I wanted to be. It
2 really wasn't my fault—just how the circumstances played out.
3 The other thing driving me to excel was, man, you get an
4 opportunity like this and if you don't take advantage of it
5 you're crazy. I'm talking to myself.

6 Q. Yes, sir. What kind of interaction did you have
7 with the military during your time in law school? Did you
8 have reporting requirements or did they monitor your progress?

9 A. Actually, not very much. I was surprised. Ted
10 Decker was The Judge Advocate General at the time, and I think
11 our grades were sent to him. We were good friends. As a
12 matter of fact, when I became the commandant here, I think he
13 wanted to come down and move in with me. He had already
14 retired and wanted to come down often. I told him, "Come as
15 often as you like." He said, "I think I can help you." I
16 said, "I'm sure you can." But actually, he never did. George
17 Prugh told me when he became TJAG, Decker offered to come help
18 him as well. Now Decker was a good guy, but of course, that
19 doesn't work.

20 Q. I'm assuming sometime during your final year, you
21 were told where you would be assigned after law school?

22 A. No, it was a last minute thing. I didn't want to go
23 to Fort Meade. I wanted other places that I thought I would

1 like better. But eventually Fort Meade is where I was
2 assigned.

3 Q. Was there an Officer Basic Course or any formalized
4 training for the JAG Corps?

5 A. No. We weren't offered anything like that. At this
6 time, there was not a JAG School in operation. You may recall
7 that the present JAG School was established at UVA in 1951.

8 Q. You mentioned there was no formalized JAG training
9 for you out of law school; you just went right into the field?

10 A. That's right. Bingo.

11 Q. It was like here you are, have fun.

12 A. That's right. You know; it's not all that tough.
13 You can catch on pretty fast, so it all worked out well.

14 Q. It seems to have worked just fine for you, sir.
15 Tell me a little more about your first JAG assignment at Fort
16 Meade.

17 A. Now, let's see. We're at Meade and Elwood Sergeant
18 was replaced by Ham Young.

19 Q. Okay.

20 A. Did you ever know Lauren Arn?

21 Q. No sir, I did not.

22 A. Lauren died a year or so ago. He was at Fort Meade
23 when Sergeant left. I don't know where Sergeant went, he

1 probably retired. Colonel Edward Hamilton Young replaced
2 Colonel Sergeant.

3 Q. Yes, sir.

4 A. Colonel Young had been the first commandant of the
5 JAG School at the University of Michigan during the war years
6 and was very proud of that. He was well up into years by this
7 time, but was still a handsome man. He was a West Point
8 graduate from the class of 1919, I think. He'd been a
9 presidential aide to Calvin Coolidge and as we got to know
10 each other, he told me a lot of stories about President
11 Coolidge. I've worked for and with so many wonderful people,
12 and he was among the very best of them. After he took over,
13 he started a judge advocate office for the post at Fort Meade.
14 I think it was his idea—and I was given that job. I was the
15 post JAG, which was just fine. I put it together, and I liked
16 the job very much.

17 Lauren Arn became Colonel Young's deputy at Second Army
18 and things were going along pretty well. I knew I was still
19 behind, as far as learning and skill was concerned. I had a
20 lot to learn, and I was doing the best I could. Colonel Young
21 called me in one day, and said, "Look, I'm going to bring you
22 up here as my deputy." I was a little stunned by that. I
23 hadn't been a post JAG very long at that time and thought,
24 well, have I goofed up some way? I didn't think so, not if

1 he's going to make me his deputy. I said, "Well, Colonel,
2 that's fine with me."

3 He then said, "I'm going to put Arn down as your
4 replacement. I'm going to switch you two. They're going to
5 get general court-martial jurisdiction, and you haven't had a
6 lot of experience yet, so I thought I'd better bring you up
7 here under my wing, and we'll put Arn down there, and that
8 will just be fine." Well, I don't think Arn liked this idea
9 very much. I know I wouldn't have in his place, but that's
10 what happened.

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. I learned very quickly that Ham Young didn't want to
13 be bothered with anything. He depended on his deputy to run
14 the office and that was that. I was in complete accord
15 although that didn't make any difference. There were about a
16 dozen posts, camps, and stations under Second Army, and the
17 JAGs were calling us all the time. The fellows would describe
18 their situation, and ask what I thought they should do about
19 it. I realized very quickly that most of the answers they
20 sought were in the Army regulations.

21 Q. Right.

22 A. Somebody had put out a list of the Army regs that
23 applied to judge advocates. It was a huge stack, about four-
24 feet long. As it turned out, they were very well chosen, and

1 the list was helpful. I got a set of these regulations, and
2 bought a circular file to store them in. It was kind of a
3 circular wire contraption about knee-high. I could use it to
4 put the regs in appropriate places. It was designed so that I
5 could get to any one I needed just by turning the file. After
6 a little practice, I could get to any regulation very quickly.

7 The file was also a bit cumbersome. I didn't want it on
8 top of my desk. I discovered that it would fit perfectly
9 underneath the desk, and there was still room for my feet. I
10 was able to hide it. I got a good grasp of the various titles
11 and what was in each regulation. I would practice quickly
12 locating them. The fellows in the field felt perfectly
13 justified in asking higher headquarters for help. It was
14 easier to call higher headquarters than to do the research.
15 That's human nature. I see it all the time, pass the work to
16 the other guy.

17 Q. Yes, sir.

18 A. Colonel Young's office was at the other end of the
19 hall. Hardly anybody ever went in there. He'd keep his feet
20 up on the desk, reading books or newspapers. Sometimes he
21 would practice putting on the rug. He was almost a scratch
22 golfer. He kept up with what was going on by listening to
23 every phone call that we received. The phone would ring and
24 the caller would say: "Ken, I'm sorry to bother you, but we've

1 got a problem down here." I'd get to my file quickly and pull
2 out the appropriate regulation. Then I would answer with
3 something like this: "Well, Bill, I believe you're going to
4 find in Army Regulation number so-and-so the answer to your
5 problem. If you turn to the sixth chapter (or whatever it
6 was), you'll find what you're looking for." He'd say, "Well,
7 fine. I'll study that." We'd chat a little bit more, and
8 he'd hang up. Then another request would come in. It'd be
9 the same thing over and over. I'd just pull out the
10 appropriate regulation and say, "You got a pencil and paper."
11 They'd say, "Yeah." I'd reply, "Okay. This is the regulation
12 that will apply." I got pretty good at that. I also knew the
13 Manual for Courts-Martial by heart. I'd outlined it and had
14 that thing down cold.

15 Q. Very impressive, sir.

16 A. The boss—COL Young—had a distinctive footstep; it
17 was kind of plop, plop, plop when he'd come down the hall. By
18 the time he reached my office, I would have my file back under
19 my desk. He'd come in and say, "How do you do that?" I never
20 did tell him.

21 Q. He thought you had them all memorized? Nice.

22 A. He thought he had a genius on his hands. Oh, it was
23 fun. I grew very fond of him. Ham was just the greatest guy.
24 He had been married. The first time it was to Ellen Borden,

1 heiress of the fabulous Borden Milk Company. She came from a
2 world of money and, apparently, was quite a beautiful and
3 wonderful woman. They were divorced a few years later. My
4 understanding was that Ham's mother interfered with the
5 couple. She did not get along with Ellen. She refused to let
6 her boy go.

7 I've seen pictures of Ham back in those days, and he was
8 handsome as all get out. He also possessed charming manners.
9 He loved golf as I mentioned. He once told me that golf had
10 saved his life. He was very depressed after his divorce from
11 Ellen, and golf proved to be his salvation. Maybe that's why
12 he wanted to play so much. I remember on one occasion, golf
13 caused Ham to get quite mad at me.

14 Q. Tell me about that, sir.

15 A. Major General Hugh Harris was the Commanding
16 General, and he was a tough guy. Matter of fact, he was the
17 President of the Citadel when my son Jim was there. He can
18 confirm how tough Harris was. Like all of us, Ham was
19 entitled to 30 days of leave each year, and he made sure he
20 used all of those 30 days. I think he probably spent nine out
21 of ten of those days on the golf course. I also played, and
22 he wanted me to go with him very often. I would tell him,
23 "Colonel, somebody has to be here to keep the shop." He'd
24 say, "No, come on," and off we'd go. One time Ham took a

1 week's leave, and played golf every day. He was after me to
2 come out and play with him. General Hugh Harris, called a
3 meeting for 2 o'clock that afternoon. Either Ham or I had to
4 be there.

5 That morning I'd had a call from Ham saying he'd meet me
6 at such and such a time, 1 o'clock as I recall. I went out to
7 the golf course dressed in my uniform at about 12:30 and I
8 found him having lunch. I walked up to him and he said, "Why
9 aren't you in your golf clothes?" I said, "Colonel, there's a
10 meeting. General Harris has called a meeting, and I've got to
11 be there since you're on leave. I can't send anybody else."
12 He asked, "Well, why can't you?" I never really understood
13 why he was so put out with me. I was trying to protect him by
14 attending this meeting. If it had been the third or fourth
15 guy down the line, I don't think Harris would have liked it
16 and I didn't want to risk that. He got over being put out
17 with me in 2 or 3 days. I think he could see I was right.
18 However, he'd never admit it. He'd come in the office every
19 once in a while and say, "What are you doing?" I'd say,
20 "Well, this, that, or the other." He'd then say "Let's go
21 play golf," and I'd try to talk him out of it a lot of times.
22 I was worried we'd get caught being out golfing all the time,
23 and it would make a bad impression.

24 Q. Yes, sir.

1 A. Anyway, he didn't much care what anyone thought as
2 he was nearing the end of his career. He was one wonderful
3 guy. I saw the efficiency report that he gave me when I left.
4 I've had a lot of good ones, but I don't recall that everyone
5 was perfect, but that one sure was. Every place he checked, I
6 had the highest number he could give me. In the part where
7 you described a guy, it sounded like I walked on water.
8 You've got to like a fellow like that.

9 Q. Yes, sir. Are you sure it wasn't because you were a
10 good golfer?

11 A. No. Let me tell you what I did. I learned early on
12 that you don't bother the boss and don't ask him how to do
13 things. I made that mistake very rarely, and I'll give you an
14 instance of it later. You just don't ask the boss. You find
15 out from other people what to do, and take all the work off of
16 his back that you can. That way, you're going to get along a
17 lot better. That's what I've always tried to do.

18 Q. That makes sense, sir.

19 A. Later, while working for Chief Justice Warren
20 Burger, as the Director of Education and Training for the
21 Federal Judicial Center, I applied the same philosophy. I'd
22 retired from the service, and was living in Dallas when I was
23 asked to be interviewed by him. I had been asked to consider
24 the job, but the interview came first. During the hour-long

1 meeting I talked maybe 5 minutes. I kept quiet and didn't ask
2 any questions. I had no idea what the Chief Justice was
3 talking about, as he was telling me what he expected, I just
4 nodded at the appropriate times. I left a favorable
5 impression by keeping quiet and was offered the job. I'm
6 jumping ahead but it won't hurt.

7 Q. No, it's fine, sir.

8 A. After being hired I learned what the Chief Justice
9 was talking about. I found out that I would have to prepare
10 and execute training courses for federal district judges and
11 everyone else in the federal judiciary. I kept the training
12 of the circuit judges and the district judges in my bailiwick.
13 I kept this task for myself, because it was so touchy and so
14 important. You ask yourself, if you had to prepare a course
15 for a district judges, what would you do? What subjects would
16 you introduce? I'd been at the Federal Judiciary Center for a
17 relatively a short time, and one night my boss, Judge Al
18 Murrah, after whom the Murrah building that was blown up in
19 Oklahoma City was named, was in his office. He normally hung
20 around after hours. His wife wasn't with him, so he worked
21 long hours. I dropped in to visit with him, and I said,
22 "Judge, I've got a question." "What's that," he said. I
23 replied, "What is it you want me to do?" Well, he just flared
24 up. He just—oh, golly, he became angry. I don't know

1 whether he felt bad or not. I didn't think the question was
2 too bad, but he pounded on the desk. He came down hard with
3 his fist, and said, "How the hell do I know? You're supposed
4 to be the expert around here." Well, it wasn't the time for
5 laughter, but I laughed anyway.

6 Q. What happened next?

7 A. He said, "What are you laughing at?" And I
8 answered, "You just said what I had hoped you would say,
9 because I know what I want to do, but I don't want to do
10 anything that would go contrary to what you want done. I
11 thought I'd talk to you about it first, but you've given me my
12 marching orders. I know what to do, Your Honor, and I will do
13 it." Well, with that he said, "Good night, Colonel." I left,
14 but we became the best of friends after that.

15 Q. You handled that very well, sir. But I have to ask
16 how you answered your question?

17 A. To confront this challenge I began to ask around,
18 and I found out who the brightest judge in the system was.
19 The guy that got the most votes was a young circuit court
20 judge from Baton Rouge named Alvin Rubin. Incidentally, he
21 died an early death of some form of cancer, which was a
22 terrible loss. I called him, and I told him that I'd heard
23 that he had more moxie than the rest of the boys. He laughed
24 at that and denied that he did. I said that I would like to

1 convene a group of knowledgeable judges and decide what
2 subjects ought to be taught to district judges. I told him I
3 had a pretty good budget and we'd put him up at the Hay-Adams
4 Hotel across the street from our offices off Lafayette Square,
5 which was a very nice place. I said, "I think if we worked on
6 this about a week—5 days in Washington—that'd be
7 sufficient." He said, "Great." I then asked him, "Who do you
8 think we ought to ask to join us?" We eventually decided on
9 another half dozen fellows to invite. They all accepted, and
10 it wasn't long before I had a program; one that worked; one
11 that the judges really wanted and could use. For the next 17
12 years I held that position. Things were not too difficult. I
13 think deciding where to begin and what was needed was one of
14 the secrets of our success.

15 Q. Sir, let's backtrack here a little bit to when you
16 first came into the JAG Corps, I had asked you about your
17 legal training, and you said that you hadn't received any
18 specific training coming in as a judge advocate. You also
19 mentioned that the JAG School was in operation at the
20 University of Michigan prior to that. Why didn't you attend
21 classes there?

22 A. I'm sorry if I confused you, Rob. Let me explain.
23 I came to the JAG Corps in 1951, and in '46 the school in
24 Michigan was closed. It didn't operate after that. The next

1 time that we had a JAG School was in 1951, the year I
2 graduated from UVA. It was set up by major General Ted Decker
3 and was located right here at the University of Virginia.
4 Decker was the TJAG at that time, and this is the place he
5 wanted the school to be. He did quite a selling job. That's
6 how it got established.

7 Q. It sounds like you just missed it?

8 A. Yes. I knew from Decker what the plan was, and I
9 knew he had a lot of problems selling people on the idea. A
10 lot of people didn't like it. I thought it was a great idea.
11 I knew how good the facilities were from my time here as a law
12 student. The law library for the students, guest speakers,
13 and so on was just amazing.

14 Q. I'm assuming there was quite a difference coming
15 into the JAG Corps from the field artillery.

16 A. Oh, yes. It was a new world entirely. As a matter
17 of fact, there were periods when I wasn't certain I hadn't
18 made a mistake. That was mainly because I think there was a
19 little animosity around. I had received a free education and
20 many others had to pay for it. It had been tough, I imagine,
21 to get through for a lot of them, so there was a little
22 jealousy too and—but you live with those things—you win
23 people over anyway and finally it all works out.

24 Q. What was your initial impression of the JAG Corps?

1 A. The intellectual aspects of it were obvious. I
2 realized that it was really a step up for me. It was nice to
3 be in the field artillery, but if we're not in a war, I
4 couldn't get excited about going out firing cannons all day
5 long or doing the routine stuff day in and day out, which
6 you'd have to do in order to be ready for the next conflict.
7 We thought at that time there wouldn't be any conflict for
8 some time. But, as you know, the Korean War was right on the
9 heels of World War II.

10 Q. Yes, sir.

11 A. It was rather embarrassing. I was a regular Army
12 officer assigned as a full-time student at the University of
13 Virginia when the Korean War came along. A large number of
14 guys were pulled out to go back to duty to fight in the Korean
15 War. Yet, not one of the five of us Army officers enrolled
16 here was touched. We stayed right here and finished school

17 Q. Yes, sir.

18 A. We took a lot of teasing about that. People would
19 ask, "What about these Army officers, why don't they go? That
20 is their profession." Bob Williams went to Washington to see
21 the TJAG. He volunteered all of us to leave school for active
22 duty. I didn't give him permission to volunteer me. I'd had
23 enough of fighting, but he did it anyway. The TJAG told him
24 to get his butt right back to Virginia and keep quiet. The

1 government had spent a lot of money on us already and we were
2 going to see this thing through.

3 Q. Looking back on your career prior to the JAG Corps,
4 what do you think best prepared you for your time as a new
5 judge advocate; any experience, any individual?

6 A. I think perhaps what prepared me best for it was
7 having experienced the Depression; having experienced a tough
8 row to hoe going through college, working all the time, and
9 then there was always the thought, could I afford a family?
10 Could I really do all these things? The opportunity to get
11 ahead, or as my mother used to say, make something of myself,
12 all entered into it too. Obviously getting this education was
13 a step up in many ways. Something I could be proud of myself
14 for. But once you have it, it's just the beginning too, you
15 know Rob. We continue to study; we continue to absorb. We
16 continue to grow.

17 Q. Yes, sir.

18 A. As a matter of fact, another wonderful thing about
19 it was that I could use the legal training to do so much for
20 others. I've made many, many friends simply because I've been
21 able to help them out when they got into some sort of
22 difficulty. I've gone as far as to represent them in court,
23 but you have to watch that though, because you don't want to
24 cross sabers with a bar association.

1 Q. Yes, sir.

2 A. You have to be very careful. Where I live now, I
3 have a pretty active pro bono law practice. My fellow
4 retirees are my clients. There is always a lot of scamming
5 going on. I've been there almost 20 years and rarely have I
6 been without some working case, or something waiting in the
7 wings for me to do. Helping others is always such a joy.

8 Q. Yes, sir.

9 A. I've had a lot of fun with it too. People have
10 pulled dirty tricks on some of the residents. When I find out
11 about it, I often convince my friends to file a complaint in
12 small claims court. I explain that they didn't need a lawyer.
13 I stand behind them, and I even help them rehearse. One guy
14 got scammed to the tune of five thousand bucks from some
15 travel agency type thing. I convinced him to file his
16 complaint. I thought it would be best if he did all of the
17 talking. I used to practice with him. I'd sit at my desk,
18 role-playing the judge. He'd come in and say, "Good morning,
19 sir." I'd, "No, no. You say, Your Honor. Good morning, Your
20 Honor. You call him, Your Honor." That's what they like. So
21 we rehearsed and rehearsed and rehearsed. When his court date
22 came, he was a little nervous, but he got up there and did his
23 thing, and he got an award, a judgment of five thousand bucks.
24 It didn't cost him a dime. After it was over, he said to me,

1 "Hey, Ken." I said, "I'd like to go back to being called Your
2 Honor if you don't mind. Let's just continue that." I won't
3 repeat what he said about that idea. Good guy; he died some
4 time ago. Frank Riggs was his name. He was one of a kind.

5 Q. Sounds like you were quite a mentor. Early on in
6 your JAG career, what were some of the most common legal
7 issues you faced?

8 A. We always had the problem of AWOL and, you know,
9 that was common as all get out, particularly overseas. I was
10 with Colonel Young at Fort Meade, and I would have loved for
11 that to have gone on forever, but I got orders to go to
12 Germany to be the staff judge advocate of the 4th Infantry
13 Division. There were two issues. We had the usual cases of
14 theft or somebody trying to smuggle something back home. Some
15 assault and battery cases. As I said, the most common offense
16 was AWOL. Let me tell you about an AWOL problem I had. I had
17 several newly appointed judge advocate officers. As you know,
18 they were allowed 30 days a year of leave. They were in for 2
19 years. They could accumulate 60 days of leave for which
20 they're paid in one lump sum when they had served their active
21 duty obligation.

22 Q. Yes, sir.

23 A. The lads wanted to have that big check when they
24 left the service, but they still wanted to see Europe. They

1 would tell me that they had to go interview witnesses
2 someplace. I never questioned them. However, I suspected
3 they were headed for Paris or some other attractive place.
4 One of my outstanding officers was "Bill D.". He was one of
5 the brightest of all the young officers that I've ever had
6 work for me. He was truly brilliant. He went on to be a very
7 outstanding lawyer in Seattle. He became a federal district
8 judge, and the author of some fine legal books.

9 Bill had to have a minor operation, a hemorrhoidectomy,
10 and he was sent to the hospital. By the way, I had about a
11 half dozen officers on my staff. Myself, a deputy, and four
12 brand spanking new lieutenants, just out of law school.

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. They were bright and caught on quickly. Bill was
15 the brightest. At any rate, he had to go in for this
16 operation. He checked in on Sunday evening. The operation was
17 to be done the next day. He was scheduled to be hospitalized
18 for a week for recuperation. He was to be in the hospital
19 from Sunday to Sunday. On Thursday, my wife and I thought
20 it'd be nice to call on him. He'd be feeling a little bit
21 better, and we would take him some flowers and a get-well
22 card. We went to the hospital, and he wasn't there. I said,
23 "Let me see the morning report." It showed that he had signed
24 in the previous Sunday. On Thursday, which was the day I was

1 there, the morning report read, "Lieutenant ***: hospital to
2 duty." He didn't show up that day at work, or the next day,
3 Friday. He wasn't there on Saturday. We worked until noon on
4 Saturday and he wasn't there. So where was he? I suspected
5 that, in spite of the hemorrhoidectomy, he and his wife took a
6 little vacation. They probably went to Paris, which was
7 within driving distance. I was faced with a big problem. We
8 had a lot of AWOL going on, because of the temptation of going
9 to these beautiful cities and seeing something of Europe.

10 Q. Both with soldiers and judge advocates, it seems.

11 A. Oh yes. Soldiers were doing it all the time and the
12 general, Clyde Edelman, was pretty upset about it. He put the
13 word out that he wanted it stopped and, of course, that meant
14 punishment would be pretty severe if you were caught.

15 I was in a quandary. If I tell the CG, that I've got an
16 officer that did this, I felt that he'd order a general court-
17 martial. You don't try officers by special courts. I also
18 knew if he were faced with a GCM, he's either going to accept
19 Article 15 punishment, or he's going to stand trial. If he
20 stood trial, he didn't have a chance, because there's the
21 morning report as evidence, and he wasn't there. Now, if he
22 were to get a GCM, what would it do to his record? For one
23 thing, many forms you fill out ask whether you have been
24 convicted. From here on for the rest of his life he'd have to

1 check "yes, I've been convicted." That's probably going to
2 eliminate him from whatever he was trying for right then and
3 there.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. So, you see, it's an offense that doesn't amount to
6 a lot, but the consequences are pretty heavy. I talked to my
7 deputy, a fellow named Bob Durand, about it, and he said
8 "You've got to tell General Edelman. If he finds out that one
9 of these guys went AWOL and you didn't report it, you're in
10 big trouble." I said, "That's right, and if I do, he's going
11 to order a GCM, and Bill will pay for this little offense for
12 the rest of his life." I just didn't feel—you know, he took
13 a chance that he shouldn't. It was like Ted Kennedy cheating
14 on that Spanish test. As his daddy told him—Old Joe gave him
15 hell. Do you know what he said? He said, "How in the hell
16 can you do this when the payoff is so little? You took such a
17 big chance for such little gain."

18 Q. Right.

19 A. That fits in here also. I elected to let it go. I
20 knew I was taking a big risk and that I was going to be in
21 trouble with the boss if he found out what I decided. We were
22 very good friends and stayed friends until he died. But you
23 know, Rob, what's interesting, I have asked JAG after JAG,
24 what would you do if you had been in my place at that time?

1 Q. Yes, sir.

2 A. Never yet has anyone agreed with me. They've all
3 said, "I'd report it. I would try him. I wouldn't take the
4 chance." Yet, if I had it to do over, I believe I would do
5 the same thing. Bill died of brain cancer. I received a
6 letter from him, sometime later. I'd like to read a little
7 part of it here.

8 Q. That would be fine, sir. You were going to tell me
9 about an excerpt from a letter.

10 A. Yes, a letter from Bill that fits into what we are
11 talking about. Bill wrote me a letter not too long before he
12 died. I can see what he's really saying. I'll explain it,
13 after I read the last paragraph. He said, "Looking back on
14 what now seems to be a long career, I remember vividly that my
15 first job as a lawyer was working for you in Germany. You not
16 only gave me good cases to try, you also supervised me with
17 wisdom and patience. In short, you were the ideal boss for a
18 young and still partly adolescent lawyer. I remember all of
19 that with gratitude, and I am doubly grateful that our
20 friendship has been renewed in recent years."

21 As I read between the lines, I think he was thanking me
22 for the consideration that I gave him, and I don't regret my
23 restraint at all. Would I do it under other circumstances? I
24 don't know. Other people? I don't know. That's tough. It

1 would depend on the situation, the circumstances. I'd have to
2 think it and rethink it. There are tough questions that a JAG
3 has to deal with.

4 Q. I'm assuming when he returned to work, the two of
5 you had quite an interesting conversation?

6 A. Never about this. Actually, it was never mentioned.
7 He never brought it up, neither did I. I just let it go. It
8 was evident he was worried. He sweated it out. Here's
9 another point that comes into it. He had to appear before the
10 Senate Judiciary Committee when he became a Federal District
11 Judge. He had a lot of things to overcome because he had
12 defended some controversial people with great success.

13 Although it'd be interesting, due to time I won't go into
14 them. Senator Strom Thurmond was against him. He didn't want
15 him to be a judge. He didn't want him to get the position.
16 In his corner Bill had two senators from Washington; Dan
17 Evans, and for the moment I forget the other one, but he was a
18 wonderful fellow. His name's right on the tip of my tongue.
19 They said to me, "Look, we've got trouble with Strom
20 Thurmond." By the way, Strom Thurmond was a major general in
21 the Army Reserve. I don't know if you knew that, but he was,
22 and they wanted me to take the stand and say what a good
23 military officer Bill was, and that might overcome what Strom
24 Thurmond said. I didn't mention this at all to them, but I

1 said to myself, "What am I going to do if I am on the stand
2 before this Judiciary Committee and someone asks me this
3 question: 'Was he ever in any kind of trouble? Did he ever
4 do anything that broke the rules?'"

5 Q. You'd be honest, of course.

6 A. Right, I'd under oath and I would have to reveal
7 what happened.

8 Q. I gather no one asked?

9 A. The strategy was changed. Instead of putting me on
10 the stand, they decided that if I wrote a letter to Strom
11 Thurmond, hand carried—I didn't carry it, they did—perhaps
12 that would do it. Keep old Strom quiet.

13 Q. Did you write the letter?

14 A. I did. I wrote that he was a good soldier. Strom
15 accepted that, withdrew his opposition, and Bill was selected
16 for judgeship. I preached far and wide that there are
17 consequences to everything you do. Be careful all the time,
18 stop and think.

19 Q. Yes, sir, definitely. So how long were you in
20 Germany, sir?

21 A. Three years; three wonderful years.

22 Q. I'm assuming there was some Army schooling you had
23 to attend along the way?

1 A. Yes; in 1956-57 I attended the Staff and Command
2 School at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. Not long after that I
3 went to the Army War College, where I was promoted to O-6.
4 George Prugh, incidentally, was the other JAG who was there
5 with me. In fact, we were together at Leavenworth, as well as
6 the War College.

7 Q. Did other classmates go on to notoriety?

8 A. Yes, Sam Walker, I was with him in the Staff and
9 Command School. Hal Moore, who wrote "We Were Soldiers," was
10 at Leavenworth with me. I estimate about half of my class,
11 certainly at the Army War College, became general officers, at
12 least it seemed so. Many of them, of course, were at
13 Leavenworth with me also.

14 Q. Where did you go after the War College?

15 A. Korea. Seoul, Korea. I was initially the staff
16 judge advocate of the KMAG, Korean Military Advisory Group.
17 If you were assigned to that organization, you could bring
18 your family. I had Madge and Jim over there with me. They
19 both enjoyed Korea very much. We had a marvelous time. We
20 were there from the summer of '62 to the summer of '65.

21 Q. Where did you go when you returned?

22 A. Well, from '65 to '67 I was the staff judge advocate
23 of the Third Army at Fort McPherson, Georgia, which is in
24 Atlanta. I worked for a really tough guy named Lou Truman who

1 was related to President Truman. He was a grand soldier. I
2 really liked the guy, although he was very, very tough. He
3 called me in right at the beginning, and he said, "What do you
4 know about Law Day?" I said, "Well, General, I know quite a
5 bit. I know that we observe it in the service," and I
6 described it the usual stuff. I even told him about the
7 Russian version.

8 Q. Right.

9 A. It was sort of an answer to May Day that the
10 Russians have, all that business. He said, "I'm a firm
11 believer in Law Day, and I want to have a bodacious, big deal
12 dinner for all the influential people around here on the next
13 Law Day. You're the project officer; you do it; I'll back
14 you; I've got plenty of money; go ahead." He added, "As
15 speaker, I want someone from the Supreme Court." "Yes, sir."
16 Those were my orders. It sounded like a Broadway production.
17 He did everything first class.

18 This was in September, and this thing wouldn't take place
19 until the following May. I thought I had plenty of time. I
20 tried to get Justice Black to begin with. I called, and the
21 secretary said, "With something like that, you've got to put
22 it in writing. Write him a letter." I wrote him a letter.
23 It was a couple of months before he replied. The answer was
24 no. I went through the whole shebang. All nine of them. No,

1 no, no. I was using up all of my time and getting nervous as
2 a cat on a hot tin roof. Never before had I been turned down
3 9 times out of 9 tries.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. I thought, oh, my gosh, what am I going to do? I
6 tried and tried with everybody I could think of. A friend of
7 mine in Atlanta, a retired admiral in the Naval Reserve,
8 called me and said, "Bingo. I got you a speaker, a new
9 federal judge, just appointed, he'll be terrific." I asked,
10 "Who is that?" He said, "He's a fellow named Griffin Bell."
11 He was from that area. He served as the Attorney General, and
12 after that he was appointed to the federal bench. Later when
13 I was in Washington, he was on the Board of the Judicial
14 Center. We were born on the same day, October 31, 1918, and
15 became the best of friends. This started it all. Praise
16 heaven I had Griffin Bell as our speaker. I went to the
17 general to tell him this would be our speaker. He was
18 disappointed. He thought Bell did not have enough rank, you
19 know. I convinced him that Bell would be super

20 Q. Right.

21 A. He was not a celebrity. He was not known worldwide,
22 which was what my boss wanted. Then he said, "Colonel, by the
23 way, I told you I wanted entertainment." He added, "What are
24 you going to have for entertainment? Who have you selected?"

1 I said, with a brief pause, "General, my wife's going to
2 sing." His head fell to his chest in disappointment. He
3 probably thought this guy's ruining me. He probably wanted
4 Julie Andrews. I had to laugh at that, because my wife was a
5 professional singer. She majored in music, had a gorgeous
6 voice, was very pretty, and had class. I couldn't find
7 anybody else that I thought would fill the bill. She did a
8 marvelous job. I told him, "She'll be rehearsing these
9 numbers. General, if you will have your wife listen to her,
10 and if she doesn't agree, we'll get somebody else."

11 Q. Right.

12 A. I was confident Madge would pass the test. I'm not
13 certain he got his wife to check on Madge, but I think he did.
14 Madge did a beautiful job performing when the time came. I'm
15 hurrying through this story.

16 Q. Take your time, sir.

17 A. General Truman did the invitational list with care.
18 It was a who's who in Atlanta and the state of Georgia. He
19 had the governor, two senators were there, the whole smear. I
20 was sitting on needles and pins. At this time, Griffin got up
21 to speak. He started right off raising hell. He said, "This
22 is the way it's going to be." His speech had to do with
23 segregation, the way Negroes were treated, civil liberties,
24 and how the Supreme Court has decreed equality. He said

1 that's the way it's going to be in this state, as long as I'm
2 a judge. He really laid it on. I looked around, and the
3 audience had long faces. They weren't happy with what he was
4 saying. I thought, well, this is the end of me.

5 My wife sang and looked absolutely gorgeous. We had a
6 beautiful orchestra from the Army band, and, of course, the
7 club was decorated to the nines. Still from what Griffin Bell
8 said, I figured it was the end of the line for me, because the
9 CG was tough. He'd fire you quickly. The next morning was
10 Saturday. I went to work about 7:30. My deputy, Tom Wells,
11 was there when I got in. He asked how things went last night?
12 I said, "Well, yes and no." I told him what Griffin Bell
13 said, and I was worried about it. I said, "Let me tell you.
14 At 8 o'clock that phone's going to ring, and it's going to be
15 the general's aide. He's going to tell me the general wants
16 to see me." His office was about a mile from where we were.
17 "I'm going to drive over there, and he's going to call me in,
18 and he's going to tell me I'm fired. So, Tom, you might as
19 well get ready. I might as well start cleaning out my desk."
20 He shook his head, "Oh, it's not that bad." I insisted, "Yes,
21 it is. How the hell did I know what the guy's going to talk
22 about? The General believes I should have known."

23 Q. Right.

1 A. At 8 a.m., I got the call and went to see the CG.
2 His aide went in to tell him I was there. The General called,
3 "Come in, Judge." I walked in. He was in his shirt sleeves.
4 He had newspapers all over the place. He came around the
5 desk, grasped me by the shoulders, and said, "Wasn't that
6 wonderful?" I didn't really know what to say. He continued,
7 "The President just called me." The story was in the
8 Washington newspapers already. We had reporters present for
9 the occasion. He said, "LBJ is pleased at what's happening.
10 That's exactly what he wants."

11 Q. Yes, sir.

12 A. The Great Society. The President usually knew what
13 was going on. The CG was walking on cloud nine. He
14 congratulated me and not long after that he wrote a letter to
15 Washington, to the Army Adjutant General, saying I ought to be
16 promoted.

17 Q. After you left Fort McPherson, sir, you came to the
18 JAG School?

19 A. Yes. From being with General Truman those two great
20 years in Atlanta. I was very surprised when I was offered
21 this job. I jumped at it, and I regret that I didn't stay a
22 full four years as I could have. I got out of the Army a
23 little sooner than I had to and this was my last assignment.

1 I always wished I had stayed on as long as I could, because it
2 was a wonderful, wonderful life.

3 Q. What do you think best prepared you for what you
4 were about to endure as Commandant of the JAG School?

5 A. I had a big break, Rob, in this respect. You recall
6 that I'd been a student here and the faculty had hardly
7 changed. Hardy Cross Dillard, who's a legend around here, was
8 the law school dean. He was a West Point graduate, class of
9 '24. The service sent him to law school here, and he fell in
10 love with the place. He was a born teacher. As soon as he
11 could, he got out of the service (it was easier in those days)
12 and joined the faculty here at the university. He stayed
13 until he went to the World Court at the Hague, which, as you
14 know, was impressive. Hardy and I became pretty good friends.

15 Q. Yes, sir.

16 A. I was always very respectful around him, of course.
17 So I showed up here and knew the entire faculty. I was in a
18 position of being a dean myself, representing the JAG School.
19 Working primarily with Hardy Dillard, it was a new day, a
20 brand new day. He called me and said, "Come and see me." I
21 walked in, and he said, "Hello, Ken." He had never called me
22 Ken before. He didn't call me anything, as I recall, as a
23 student. "Dean, how are you?" I asked. He replied, "Well,
24 first thing out of the box, we've got to get some rules here.

1 From now on, you're Ken and I'm Hardy, OK?" I said, "No.
2 Dean, I admire you greatly. I would feel uncomfortable
3 calling you by your first name. Please allow me to continue
4 to call you Dean. I congratulate you on your position." He
5 smiled. That didn't displease him. He said, "That'd be
6 okay." Then he said, "Here's the second thing. Let's do
7 this. If one has a gripe against the other, I'll go to you or
8 you come to me and tell me what it is, but nobody else. And
9 then if we are speaking of the other guy when we are not
10 together, let's make it be something good, or don't say it at
11 all. The bad things man to man." I said, "That's wonderful.
12 I'd do it anyway. That's what I've been doing."

13 Q. That sounds like a solid agreement.

14 A. It was. That was our agreement during the entire
15 time I was here. He left before I did, unfortunately. But
16 you see, what helped me the most was the fact that I had been
17 a student here, and then I was brought back. All of the
18 faculty, all the big wheels in the law school were immediately
19 on a first name basis with me. I was accepted. I had been a
20 pretty good student and a good enough guy, plus I was never in
21 trouble. My lovely wife also worked for Fannie Farmer in the
22 library for awhile.

23 Q. Yes, sir. Was your wife pretty excited to come back
24 to Charlottesville?

1 A. I think so. It's a beautiful city. I don't
2 remember her ever saying, but she'd be quick to sound off if
3 she wasn't happy about it.

4 Q. Yes, sir. When you assumed the duties as
5 commandant, what guidance did you receive from your superiors,
6 the TJAG, or from the person you replaced? Did you get any
7 specific guidance?

8 A. No. Ted Decker was in love with this place; he had
9 started it, and it was really his baby. He talked about it a
10 great deal.

11 Q. Were you given any specific performance objectives
12 or just go have fun?

13 A. No one ever said, "Go have fun," but I didn't
14 receive any specific instructions. I did realize this was
15 something that was a very integral part of our Army, and it
16 should be even more so.

17 I wanted to make it a better school, to contribute to its
18 growth in any way that I could. I think probably every
19 commandant has added something because the school is head and
20 shoulders above what it was when I was here.

21 Q. During your time as commandant, what consumed most
22 of your time?

23 A. I operated probably a little differently than some.
24 For one thing, in a law school you're not going to find the

1 dean walking around and going in the various classes and
2 sitting there in judgment of the instructor. I didn't believe
3 in that. I had a Director of Academics, Al Rakas, who was a
4 terrific fellow, as smart as they come. He did a marvelous
5 job. I had all the confidence in the world in him, and I let
6 him run his show. If anything happened whereby he needed
7 guidance or help, I would deliver it. I think what I did most
8 of the time, and this comes back a great deal to me, was try
9 to get to know all of the students individually. If I
10 discovered that a student had any problems, I tried to somehow
11 help. I encouraged them to come to me for any help or
12 guidance whatever it was. I had the foreign students in
13 individually to get acquainted, and followed that up with
14 individual visits. I tried to make friends with all of the
15 students. I didn't go into the classrooms and critique the
16 teacher or interfere. I wanted it to be more like a civilian
17 institution where we're growing and learning in a comfortable
18 atmosphere.

19 Q. Yes, sir.

20 A. I think it worked well. For instance, do you know
21 Scott Magers? Scott was in the basic class when I came here.
22 About two years ago, I had a call from him. He said he'd just
23 found that I'd retired in San Antonio. He did the same. He
24 does arbitration work. He is very smart, and I always knew he

1 would distinguish himself. He came over, with Janet, his
2 lovely wife, and she made this remark: "We didn't know you
3 were here. We were delighted when we found it out, and we
4 wanted to see you, because you were so good to us when we were
5 students." That remark made my day. This has happened a lot,
6 and it makes me think I was on the right track.

7 Q. You took a very personal approach to what you did?

8 A. Exactly.

9 Q. One of the things we've talked about during the
10 course of our interview is where you developed your leadership
11 style. Where would you say your leadership style primarily
12 came from?

13 A. Probably developed slowly. In the coal mine I was a
14 boss. I was 18 years old, maybe less than that, but I was the
15 boss of one of the tables in the tipple. The coal came up on
16 the cage. It was dumped on an endless steel belt. Young men
17 would walk on the coal and throw rocks off. It was dirty
18 work. It was hard work. It was backbreaking work. We were
19 under cover, but the elements, that is, the wind, the rain,
20 and everything else, went right through the place, so it was
21 pretty tough. Dust was all over everything. We breathed it
22 in all the time. I realized at that time the importance of
23 treating all people as individuals; somehow that made good
24 sense. I used to do this: If I found there was a fellow that

1 maybe was stumbling a little bit, maybe he needed a little
2 rest, I'd tap him on the shoulder and say, "You go stand on
3 the side," and I'd take his place. I liked the exercise
4 anyway, because normally the boss would stand still, with a
5 long rod which was used to point out some big rock the
6 employee might overlook. We had to separate the coal from
7 everything else.

8 I think it boils down to this, right out of the Bible, if
9 you just treat the other guy like you'd like to be treated,
10 you're on the right track. Now, that's leadership.

11 Q. You'd say that's the basic premise of your
12 leadership style, treat others as you'd want to be treated?

13 A. That's exactly right. You have to treat them a
14 little differently, because they're different individuals.
15 Remember, everyone is fighting a tough fight. We all have
16 troubles. I knew every student here, or thought I did, and
17 I've had nice things said to me about it for years.

18 Q. You mentioned one of your goals was to make this
19 more of an academic institution during your time here. I was
20 told that the LLM Program kind of came about while you were
21 commandant.

22 A. General Ted Decker wanted our school to be able to
23 award Master's degrees, and I tried to help. However, after
24 Dean Dillard left I made no progress. His successor, Monrad

1 Paulsen, and I didn't really get along. He was anti-military,
2 with the result that I got no where with the project. My
3 efforts came to naught.

4 Q. I imagine being commandant here during Vietnam must
5 have presented some obstacles for you?

6 A. Yes, it did, and that was sad. Hardy Dillard went
7 to the World Court. Maybe something else, too, took him away,
8 so he wasn't here. We had another dean come in that was anti-
9 military, which made it difficult. I had to bite my tongue a
10 number of times in meetings when he'd say such things as, "We
11 shouldn't allow uniforms to be worn at all, because they upset
12 me," and this sort of thing. Well, that feeling stirred up
13 the UVA students, and they threatened an attack on the JAG
14 School. They were going to do something. I don't know what
15 the idea was, whether to wipe us out or what. Well, that was
16 ridiculous. It was nothing more than a bullying tactic. As
17 far as I'm concerned, there's one way you handle bullies, and
18 I think you know what that is.

19 There was no use in talking to the dean. It didn't do
20 any good, whatsoever. One night the UVA students lined up
21 across the road chanting various things. I called our fellows
22 out. I had them stand so far apart out in front (used his
23 hands to show an arm's distance), and we just stood there. I
24 told them, "No matter what it takes, none of these guys are

1 going to enter the school. They're not going to set foot in
2 there, and they're not going to come up on the steps. We'll
3 boot their butts or punch them in the nose or whatever it
4 takes, and I'll deliver the first blow." Eventually they
5 decided that maybe they'd better not test us. I wasn't going
6 to tolerate it. The School Board had somehow learned of the
7 threat and questioned me about it. I told them what I
8 intended to do. No one objected. This may be in the Board
9 records.

10 Q. So the JAG student body had no problem with
11 defending the JAG School?

12 A. No, the guys were all for it. But it was an
13 embarrassing, ridiculous situation. I was very disappointed
14 in the leadership at UVa that would allow this sort of thing
15 to happen. Do you think I would have ever allowed any of our
16 people to threaten somebody? My goodness, they acted like
17 idiots.

18 Q. What would you say your greatest challenge was as a
19 commandant?

20 A. I think the greatest challenge goes right back to
21 that leadership question that we talked about earlier. Seeing
22 that each one, each student came out of here a better man,
23 better qualified, more able to serve his country and the Judge
24 Advocate General's Corps and to be an asset to the Corps.

1 Again, this all relates back to the individual treatment of
2 people.

3 Q. Yes, sir and that's a telling trend. It seems to
4 work in just about all settings.

5 A. As commandant what did I want to see accomplished?
6 You asked that earlier.

7 Q. Yes, sir. What were your goals, basically?

8 A. I was not seeking any self-gratification or self-
9 glory or anything like that.

10 Q. So what would you say of all the things you did
11 while you were the commandant was your most significant
12 accomplishment?

13 A. I think that it was graduating officers that I knew
14 were going to do a good job; were going to stay in the
15 service; were satisfied with a military career. Men and women
16 who knew our objectives and would support them. This was
17 their school and as alumni would give us the benefit of what
18 they thought should be changed.

19 Q. Were there any short courses offered at the school
20 at that time?

21 A. Yes. We had some specialty courses that were a week
22 or two of duration. I felt Rakas was a genius at that,
23 because he seemed to anticipate the need for these courses
24 before the time arrived. We'd then develop the course and

1 implement it. He, Rakas, had some fine people with him on the
2 academic staff.

3 Q. Now, throughout your time in the JAG Corps you must
4 have experienced quite a few changes in how we operate as an
5 entity. What stands out in your mind as being most
6 significant?

7 A. Through the years, we've become more professional.
8 I say that because in the early days, people were following a
9 lot of old habits, and it seemed like some of them were quite
10 narrow in their thinking. As we went along, as we progressed,
11 I could see more of an interest in the world situation not
12 only in legal problems, but other problems that affect this
13 country—political problems, for example. I think the Judge
14 Advocate General's School contributed greatly to this
15 expansion of vision. I think the JAG School has made a lot of
16 us better scholars and better thinkers. I see this still
17 evolving today. As I look around the school today, I see that
18 it is vastly improved over what it was when I was here.

19 Q. Coming into the JAG Corps at such a high rank, did
20 you get a lot of trial experience?

21 A. Not as much as I would have liked, but enough, I
22 believe, to satisfy my needs. For instance, at Fort Benning,
23 I was the staff judge advocate of the post. The 2d Infantry
24 Division was located there also. I had an agreement with the

1 Division staff judge advocate that if he tried anyone of the
2 rank of major or above I or one of my field grade officers,
3 would defend the accused. If I had that same problem, the
4 Division SJA would return the favor. It worked out well.
5 This happened several times, but particularly at Benning. I
6 had the same arrangement at other locations.

7 Q. Sir, at any time in your career did you experience
8 non-lawyers trying cases. Can you tell me about that?

9 A. Oh, yes. As a matter of fact, I experienced that
10 personally. When I returned to active duty in 1946, the fact
11 that I had attended law school even for a short period was
12 known. This was a good excuse to either appoint me as the
13 trial judge advocate or defense counsel on general court-
14 martial cases. When I questioned the number of cases to which
15 I was assigned, the answer would be, "but you went to law
16 school." I realized that I didn't have the training to do
17 justice to my clients. I recall with dismay some of the
18 mistakes that I made, how hearsay evidence was misused, for
19 example. At the time that the new Manual for Courts-Martial
20 came out, a lot of people questioned the fact that we had to
21 have so many attorneys. I knew the changes were needed. We
22 wouldn't have the justice we wanted without them.

23 Q. Would you say when the non-attorneys were trying
24 cases, it was somewhat of a miscarriage of justice?

1 A. Oh, yes. I miscarried it at times myself, and I got
2 by with it. I was spouting off what the law was, and I didn't
3 have anything to back me up half the time. Having made those
4 mistakes, when I did have the opportunity to study law, I
5 really worked hard. I look back on all those years when non-
6 lawyers were trying cases, and I think it was terrible. There
7 had to be a lot of mistakes made.

8 Q. How did the Army initially react to changes in the
9 manual that required JAs to try GCM cases?

10 A. There was a lot of complaining about it. The old
11 timers griped their heads off. They were saying that the
12 federal government was trying to make jobs for lawyers and
13 that it was a waste of money. The claim was that real justice
14 was delivered thanks to the old system. Some argued that
15 everybody that came before the court should be found guilty.
16 If you were brought before a court-martial, there's no
17 question you were guilty to begin with. You've heard the old
18 saying, "Let's bring the guilty so-and-so in and give him a
19 fair trial." Unfortunately, there was truth to that.

20 Q. What is your sense of how the role of the paralegals
21 has changed from the time you initially came into the JAG
22 Corps until the time that you retired?

23 A. They, too, have become more professional. In the
24 early days, people would get assigned to these clerical

1 positions. Some liked it; some didn't. But now, the service
2 has given it recognition. I note with praise that you have a
3 NCO Academy at the JAG School. I think that's a wonderful
4 thing. I saw these fellows out front lined up, and I thought
5 they just looked just great. Obviously, they're very proud of
6 what they're doing. It's a distinction for them to have this
7 skill, and it's going to improve our efficiency, because it's
8 a big job to get these cases through on time and master the
9 administrative requirements that have to be done. I know from
10 my own experience, that paralegals can be invaluable.

11 Q. What did you use your paralegals for early on in
12 your JAG career?

13 A. They helped with processing the cases. One thing
14 seemed to happen all the time. We had a time factor to meet.
15 We would account for the time it took us to process a case.
16 The case was tried on such and such a date. When did you get
17 it in for review? When did you finally send it in, and that
18 sort of thing? If you didn't meet a certain date, you'd have
19 to explain why. That backfired on me once. I had a sergeant
20 paralegal, and he was very, very good. He knew about the time
21 requirements and the pressure that higher headquarters was
22 putting on me. Usually, he'd speed those things through.
23 Sometimes a little too fast. Somehow or other, one of the
24 files got through, and it was dated prior to the trial itself,

1 which caused a little consternation. In our federal courts,
2 you know, we have these folks, these paralegals that have been
3 there for years. Most are exceedingly competent. The federal
4 courts run very smoothly, and I see now that we're now getting
5 the same competence in The Judge Advocate General's Corps.
6 The better these people are trained, the more stress and
7 strain it's going to take off the judge advocates.

8 Q. Yes, sir. I agree completely. Now I realize that
9 this is kind of a sensitive topic to approach, but how would
10 you describe race and gender relations in the Army during your
11 career?

12 A. I think to treat someone improperly, to treat
13 someone without consideration simply because of their color or
14 sex is a terrible things to do. It's sickening. My heart just
15 goes out to guys like Air Force Lt. Gen. Ben Davis, for
16 example. I don't know if you know who he was, but he was a
17 wonderful man. He was the Chief of Staff of the Eighth Army
18 during my final years in Korea. He was also my golf partner,
19 and we became very close friends. He came to Washington after
20 he retired, and our friendship resumed. He had a sharp mind,
21 and he became a terrific leader. He led the Tuskegee Airmen,
22 of World War II fame. He told me he had been "silenced" for
23 his four years at West Point because of his color. How could

1 those cadets refuse to speak to him? I just couldn't imagine
2 it.

3 Q. Yes, sir.

4 A. As a Christian, I think it's a sin. I think it's
5 just as sinful as it can be. I feel the same way about women.
6 If we don't use every bit of ability that we have in this
7 country, we're making a big mistake. In the past, we've
8 relegated women to being cooks and typists, and have not
9 allowed them use the full scope of their abilities. That is a
10 waste of people. We can't afford to do it, and never could.

11 Q. I am sure you're aware, that these behaviors are no
12 longer tolerated in our Army.

13 A. Oh, yes, it's been coming for years. We're finally
14 getting some sense.

15 Q. Yes, sir. I believe that racial/gender equality
16 across the board is somewhat the norm today. I gather you
17 concur with this?

18 A. Anyone that holds anything against an individual
19 because of their color or sex is making a horrible mistake.
20 It shouldn't be tolerated.

21 Q. What would you say, all things considered, was the
22 defining moment of your military career?

23 A. The defining moment of my military career? The
24 seriousness of World War II would have to enter into that,

1 because one never knew day to day whether he was going to be
2 alive the next day, you know. That makes one take a serious
3 look at what's going on.

4 Q. Yes, sir.

5 A. It wasn't so bad for me being in a high
6 headquarters, although I was out every day with the frontline
7 troops. When the war ended and we had acquitted ourselves so
8 well, the nation looked so good and, obviously, at that time,
9 we were number one in the world. Morale picked up; the
10 Depression seemed to be over; victory was ours. We had
11 defeated an animal-like enemy. The Nazis were more horrible
12 than I could ever describe to you, with their concentration
13 camps and desire to rule the world. They were awful. As Ike
14 himself said time after time, "My, how I hate the Germans." I
15 had been a part of this thing which meant that we had attained
16 freedom for much of the world. Now that's a tough moment to
17 top. My brother had been lost, but he'd died to help give us
18 victory. It was over. That was the defining moment when I
19 decided to contribute however I could to our great country.
20 It came first.

21 Q. Yes, sir. It seems to me that not just in the
22 military but throughout your life you always placed the needs
23 of others before your own. Is that pretty accurate?

1 A. I hope so. As a Christian, that's the only way to
2 go. That's not to say I haven't done a lot of dumb things
3 either. I'm so ashamed of some of my shortcomings that I
4 wouldn't tell you about those them. I believe that if one is
5 centered on himself self, it is one of the worst mistakes he
6 can make. Real joy comes from helping others, and I love that
7 feeling.

8 Q. I'd say from everything I know about you, it's
9 definitely true, sir. As a specific example didn't you
10 receive a Soldier's Medal?

11 A. Yes.

12 Q. Can you tell me about that?

13 A. Yes. On March 7, 1959, I had another close brush
14 with death. My brother-in-law was in pretty serious trouble,
15 and he'd asked me to defend him. I agreed to do it—the sort
16 of a thing you have to do. I was driving to Fort Benjamin
17 Harrison in Indiana. At the time I was around Indian Hill,
18 Ohio, a very nice area close to Cincinnati. I was on a built-
19 up, two lane road, and it was high. It was at least 10 or 12
20 feet. The sun was setting in the west. I saw a car come over
21 the rise ahead. It left the ground. I could see the sun
22 under the car. It was approaching at a tremendous rate of
23 speed. It appeared to be at least a mile away. It was coming
24 right at me so I stopped immediately. I thought about jumping

1 out of my car. However, the other driver was coming so fast,
2 I would guess at about 90 miles an hour, that I didn't know
3 whether I could make it to a place of safety. I was afraid I
4 was going to be hit. I couldn't make up my mind, so I stayed
5 in my car. I got as far off to the right as I could. As the
6 car approached, it began to veer toward me. It looked like it
7 was going to be a head-on collision. At the last moment the
8 other car swerved in front of me, went off of the highway and
9 became airborne. It was well up in the air. It wiggled a
10 little bit, and then it settled down and came to the earth
11 with a pretty good bang. It bounced into some trees. I heard
12 and saw what appeared to be an explosion. It wasn't a big
13 fireball, but flames developed right away from the front of
14 the car. As the car went by me, I could see that the driver
15 was slumped over the steering wheel. I ran down to the
16 vehicle, and went around to the driver's side. There were
17 fallen limbs scattered around. The engine was on fire, and
18 the flames were increasing. They were up above the
19 windshield. I tried, but I couldn't get the door opened on
20 the driver's side. That side was crumbled. I went around to
21 the other side. The lock button was pressed down. The door
22 was locked. I took one of the larger limbs, and broke out the
23 passenger window enough with it so I could reach in and pull
24 the lock button up. Thank heaven, the door opened. The

1 driver was a big boy, 18 years old, football player and a very
2 husky kid. He'd come out of his shoes. He was wearing
3 loafers. One of his feet was stuck under the accelerator. I
4 freed his foot, and got him turned to where I could pull him
5 by his shoulders. I never could have done this without the
6 adrenaline that seemed to be in abundance. I tugged and
7 tugged with my arms under his armpits. Slowly, was dragging
8 him away from the fire. I thought that the car was going to
9 explode, and I prayed I could get him to a place of safety. I
10 pulled him out of the car and part way to the hill. A fellow
11 arrived and helped me get him to the top of the incline.

12 When I was in the car, I noticed was a white bundle in my
13 peripheral vision. It lay on the back seat of the car. I
14 didn't have time to examine it. I thought, "Could that be a
15 child? If it is and that kid burns up—that's what I was
16 afraid of—I'll never be able to get over that." I went back
17 down to the car. By now the inside of the car was burning,
18 and I couldn't go near the front. It was all aflame. I
19 jumped on the trunk and beat out a hole in the back window. I
20 was able to reach inside there, making sure the jagged glass
21 didn't cut my arm. I felt the bundle. I pulled it up to
22 where I could see it. It was a white bag of laundry. I
23 jumped off the trunk. Shortly after that, the flames reached

1 the gas tank, and that was the end of the automobile. It was
2 a goner.

3 Q. When did the authorities arrive?

4 A. The first to arrive were the cops. We didn't
5 need the police at that point, but immediately they came over
6 and one asked, "What happened?" and "Who are you?" I tried to
7 explain what happened and eventually, I just gave the guy one
8 of my calling cards. The fire department arrived next, but
9 the car was almost a shell by that time. Then the ambulance
10 came, which was good. I was having chest pains. I thought I
11 might be having a heart attack. I thought I'd get in the
12 ambulance and go with that kid to the hospital and get
13 examined. Before I could do that, it was gone. They got to
14 him as soon as they arrived and hustled him right off.

15 I decided to find a hospital. I planned to look for the
16 blue markers. The first one I saw would get my business. The
17 people began to dissipate. I started out. The pain and
18 discomfort seemed to lessen. Finally, I decided it was
19 probably the strain and stress at the time, so I kept going.
20 Here's an interesting insight into the accident. One of the
21 investigators sent it to me.

22 The young driver was in his sister's car. He had worked
23 all night, and fell asleep at the wheel. There wasn't any
24 evidence of intoxication. The kid's father was very nice. He

1 was so grateful. The knowledge of this incident seemed to
2 precede me, because the members of the court knew about it.
3 The president of the court took me aside before we started,
4 and congratulated me. He was really a good guy. They
5 acquitted my client. After the trial, the president said to
6 me, "Now, when you are driving back, you can do it with a
7 clear and relaxed mind." The guy was terrific I thought. He
8 was the sort I'd like to know better.

9 Q. You're referring to the president of the panel,
10 correct?

11 A. Yes, the president of the panel. I believe to this
12 day that that is what saved this guy's bacon.

13 Q. Looking back, sir, on your career, and all the moves
14 you made and the schools you went to, what was the impact of
15 all that on your family?

16 A. I think it was positive, because my wife and son
17 loved the Army and military life.

18 Q. Prior to coming into the JAG Corps, what was your
19 interaction with judge advocates, if any?

20 A. I can't recall having any. As a newly inducted
21 soldier, it is all kind of a big blur. I knew these guys that
22 were commissioned had a better deal than what the rest of us
23 had.

24 Q. All going back to the movie theater?

1 A. In a way.

2 Q. As you were finalizing your decision to leave the
3 military, had you already started lining up civilian
4 opportunities?

5 A. I had several opportunities available.
6 Unfortunately, I took the worst one that I could have chosen.
7 I also applied for a deanship at a law school in Chicago.
8 It's worth explaining. The search committee asked me to
9 address the student body. I agreed, and a few days later I
10 was on the stage in their auditorium facing the students. I
11 was in uniform because I was in Chicago on some government
12 business.

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. The attendees knew that I was a colonel in the Army.
15 That information had been distributed. The audience was in
16 place when I arrived. Half of the front row was occupied by
17 former soldiers—GI's. There must have been 20 or so. They
18 were going to rib me. I'd been tipped off of their
19 intentions. I was cautioned to watch out for these guys. I
20 was introduced and began my presentation. I told them about
21 my education and experiences. As soon as I ended I got into
22 questions and answers. The leader of this ex-military group
23 said, "If you become the dean, are you going to instill any
24 military regulations in this school?" I said, "You betcha. I

1 sure am. Isn't it true you fellows are all ex-soldiers?"
2 "Yeah," they responded. I said, "Put your feet in front of
3 you. Let me see your shoes." I said, "If I become Dean, I
4 will check them every morning. I will also check your general
5 appearance." The student body didn't know what to make of it
6 at first, but they picked up right away that it was a lot of
7 kidding around.

8 Q. Yes, sir.

9 A. I was having a wonderful time with them. Then
10 things got sort of serious. This one big, black guy stood up,
11 and said, "If you become the dean, are you going to put a
12 black professor on the faculty?" I was ready for that one. I
13 replied, "Well, it all depends. How good a teacher would this
14 person be? Friend, let me tell you something. I just
15 finished a career in the Army and you know yourself, you'll
16 have to admit, that those of us in the service, particularly
17 officers, are not biased." I'm not so sure it's 100% true,
18 but he didn't argue with me. I continued, "It doesn't make
19 any difference to me if a man is black, green, yellow or," I
20 went through most of the colors. I continued, "You know, the
21 important thing is how good a teacher this person is. You've
22 got a good school—but can't we make it better? Why can't our
23 school be as good as any of them?" I added, "We want to make
24 this place better." Next, there was a question from the

1 faculty. I said, "The way I feel about that is I'm going to
2 come in here with the thought that you all deserve a raise.
3 First, let's make it a better school. I don't know how we go
4 about raising the money to do it, but I would expect to be
5 very loyal to you, and I would expect you to be loyal to me."
6 I had a lot of fun with these students. The military types
7 would keep coming back with cute remarks. Nothing offensive.
8 I told the crowd, "I'm going to be especially tough on this
9 gang right here because they are a little older and we can
10 expect more from them." They liked that. I got a lot of
11 applause.

12 The time came for me to leave—I had an airplane to
13 catch. I apologized, "I've got to go. I've enjoyed this very
14 much, but I've got a plane to catch." I walked to the side of
15 the stage. As I started down some steps everyone stood up and
16 applauded. Later, a fellow called to talk about the position.
17 I told him that I had decided on another position, and I'd
18 like to withdraw from consideration. He indicated that the
19 Board favored me. It was difficult to turn him down. My wife
20 and I are from Illinois so we knew how bad the weather got in
21 the winter. Aside from the thought of the bad weather,
22 finding a place to live in the hustle and bustle of the windy
23 city just didn't appeal to us. I'd been offered this job in

1 Dallas, which I thought would be better. I was very fond of
2 Bob Love, who was the head of the organization also.

3 Q. Let's get to that in just a second. What year did
4 you actually retire from the school?

5 A. 1970.

6 Q. What was the last thing you recall doing in your
7 uniform?

8 A. My son had just graduated from the Citadel and
9 earned his commission. I pinned his bars on his uniform. It
10 was a great day.

11 Q. After you retired, you just rode off into the
12 sunset?

13 A. I didn't ride very far. I felt I was too young to
14 hang it up. I had been offered several jobs of one kind or
15 another. In Korea I had gotten to know Bob Love very well.
16 He came over there wanting to get something started, peace
17 through law, he called it. World peace through law was what
18 he advocated. He came to Korea. My staff helped him a great
19 deal, and we became very good friends as a result of that.
20 Let me tell you a few things about him.

21 Bob Love was only a high school graduate. He didn't
22 receive any formal schooling past that. By the time he was
23 25, he was a multimillionaire. He read the law; he became a
24 lawyer. At age 21, he was licensed to practice. He became

1 the dean of Southern Methodist University. He established
2 that law school. All of this with only a high school
3 education. He founded one of the leading law firms in Dallas.
4 He played an impressive role at the Nuremberg Trials . What a
5 man. You can see why I admired him so much.

6 Q. He sounds very accomplished.

7 A. He was an outstanding fellow. We became well
8 acquainted and he offered me a job. He wanted me to come to
9 work for him at Southern Methodist University, which is a
10 great place. He had founded the Southwestern Legal Foundation
11 there. Among other things, the organization conducted courses
12 for American Indians. I admired that endeavor. That was a
13 great thing. I decided that life at a university like
14 Southern Methodist would be great, and I accepted the job.
15 We'll call Bob Love the number one man at the Southwester
16 Legal Foundation. Next to Bob was a Polish fellow named
17 Andrew Cecil. Andrew was afraid, I think, that Bob was
18 bringing me in as his replacement. I think he had the sort of
19 mentality whereby you want to eliminate a threat before it can
20 get to be too big a threat. Much to my surprise, I found out
21 he was doing a good job of running me down when I was not
22 around. My friends were telling me, "Hey, this guy says that
23 you're not a very nice person," and all sorts of deprecation.
24 I couldn't understand his enmity. I complained to Bob Love,

1 and asked him how much of this did I have to tolerate? He
2 said that's just the way Andrew was, and I shouldn't pay any
3 attention to him. Good grief. How can I help but pay
4 attention to him?

5 Cecil had everybody except me afraid of him. He'd
6 threaten them with their job if they didn't do what he wanted.
7 He had his own set of rules which were unreasonable. He
8 claimed that he'd been a judge in Poland, but had no evidence
9 of this because of course, Hitler burned all the books and all
10 the records. I had serious doubts about his self-proclaimed
11 history. If one looked for another job, that called for an
12 automatic dismissal. You'd get fired. I was so displeased
13 with myself for not looking into this before taking the job.
14 We had bought a lovely home in Dallas and had to sell it at a
15 loss.

16 There was a lot of prayer involved, and before long I had
17 a letter from Rowland Kirks, an old Army buddy. He wound up
18 as the Director of the Administrative Office of the U.S.
19 Courts. I'm sure you're familiar with that office.

20 Q. Yes, sir.

21 A. Let me tell you something about him. After I
22 graduated from UVA, I went to Fort Meade, Maryland. He was
23 the dean of National University Law School.

1 In time this became American University, which is very
2 prominent today. Rowland asked me to teach military law for
3 him. I joined his faculty as an adjunct professor. I taught
4 at night. I was beginning to gain experience in that field.

5 In his letter, Rowland explained that he was on a
6 committee to fill three positions, one of which was the
7 Director of Education and Training at the Federal Judicial
8 Center. He thought I could fill that position, but he wanted
9 me to consider the other two also. He asked me to come to
10 Washington D.C. to discuss the matter. I was interviewed by
11 Chief Justice Burger and selected for the position. That's
12 how I ended up in Washington where we had an absolutely
13 marvelous time.

14 Q. What was your initial impression of being in D.C.?

15 A. Well, I was always afraid of it from what I'd heard
16 before about the high cost of living, the traffic, and the
17 crime rate. My mother-in-law was dying of cancer. My wife
18 and Jim went to Anna, Illinois in order to look after her. I
19 went on to Washington to get things settled. The first two or
20 three times I put my car in the parking garage across the
21 street from where I worked, I had it filled with gasoline. At
22 night, when I got in it, it was empty. They'd steal my gas,
23 which was disconcerting. I didn't want to buy a house without
24 my wife selecting it, because I'd never hear the end of it. I

1 stayed at several places and worked long hours. In the
2 meantime, I had this big job I had to figure out and get
3 going. The beginning of it, at times, was disheartening.
4 Before long, I could see what was needed to be done. It
5 turned out to be the best thing I could have ever done. I
6 liked it so much. It was just absolutely wonderful.

7 Q. What did the job entail?

8 A. First of all, I was to train, maybe that's not the
9 word, but provide educational assistance to every person in
10 the federal judiciary. I built up a pretty good staff. The
11 judges were my responsibility. I was afraid to entrust that
12 to a subordinate both at the circuit and district levels. My
13 first problem was to ascertain what these judges needed to be
14 taught. The judges differed in what kind of education was
15 needed. Let me give you an example. I recall this very nice
16 lady judge. Immediately following graduation from law school,
17 she became an administrator for a big insurance firm. I
18 recall another one that was on a university faculty someplace;
19 but didn't know a thing about criminal law. There were other
20 people who were getting judgeships that had been district
21 attorneys. All they knew was criminal law.

22 Q. It sounds like quite a variance in expertise.

23 A. It was, and I had to learn to provide the
24 educational balance that was required. I had to figure out

1 what these people needed and provide them the tools to be
2 better-rounded.

3 Q. How did you figure out what they needed, sir?

4 A. The first thing I did was to find out who was the
5 smartest member of the judiciary. Who would be the best to
6 tell me, to guide me in what I should do? It turned out to be
7 an appellate judge in Baton Rouge, Louisiana.

8 Q. You said all the judges recommended a particular
9 judge in Louisiana?

10 A. Not all, but he was #1 on the hit parade. I called
11 him, and he accepted my offer and said he would help me. I
12 asked him to name six or seven others to help us. He did so.
13 All accepted. I issued the orders. We met on a Monday morning
14 and worked hard for a week. We selected courses, instructors,
15 and whatever was needed. That's the way it worked. It turned
16 out very successful. I think most of the judges in the system
17 wanted to teach. I would say, "Okay. What would you like to
18 teach? Give me a title, and give me a description of your
19 proposed course." In addition, a lot of law professors wanted
20 to get in the act on this. These were great professors who
21 wanted to sweeten up their resumes by teaching federal judges,
22 which was not a bad thing to have on your record. That was
23 how I selected the courses. We were off and running. Of
24 course, changes were made as necessary.

1 Pretty soon I had a long list of proposed courses. This
2 included a description of the course and the name and resume
3 of the proposed instructor. I kept a list and description of
4 all the proposed courses. I'd put the topics recommended on a
5 ballot and sent it to all the judges, asking them to indicate
6 their preferences, from 1 to 25. We could present maybe eight
7 of these subjects at a 3- or 4-day seminar. We used critique
8 sheets. If a topic received good reviews or ratings, it
9 stayed on the program until it had gone all around the
10 country. If it didn't rate well, it came off. This ensured
11 that the courses that were taught were all good ones. That
12 worked out just splendid.

13 Q. For whom did you actually work?

14 A. My boss was the Director of the Federal Judicial
15 Center. At first it was Justice Tom Clark. He was there for
16 just a short time. As a matter of fact, he was the founder of
17 the Center. He was succeeded by Judge Alfred P. Murrah. He
18 was followed by Judge Hoffman from Virginia. After Judge
19 Hoffman the Board selected a civilian named Leo Levin, who was
20 a prominent and very gifted law professor. He remained in
21 that position for the next 10 years before it went back to the
22 custom of having only federal judges in charge. Usually,
23 they're in the top position for 3 or 4 years.

1 Q. How do you think your time in the military prepared
2 you for that job?

3 A. My time with the JAG School, and what I learned
4 about the administration of education and training there was a
5 big help. The reputation of having been the commandant meant
6 a great deal. I was always introduced as the former
7 commandant of The Judge Advocate General's School, and
8 automatically folks assumed I knew something about legal
9 education. I passed the first hurdle.

10 Q. You had instant credibility.

11 A. I think so. There is also a certain level of
12 respect for military people; for having had combat service;
13 for having attained the rank of colonel. Say what you will
14 about the military, but underneath Americans have a deep
15 respect for it.

16 Q. Did you have an opportunity to get to know any of
17 the Supreme Court justices?

18 A. Yes. All of them who were there in my time. As a
19 matter of fact, I made an effort to know every judge in the
20 system and certainly the members of the U.S. Supreme Court.
21 Chief Justice Rehnquist was a very shy man. He'd go off and
22 stand by himself on social occasions. I made an effort to
23 join him, and usually did. After I had left the judiciary, I
24 did some work for the Asia Foundation. I worked with foreign

1 judges. I brought a group in from Egypt, and took them to the
2 U.S. Supreme Court. Chief Justice Rehnquist walked them
3 through the process of what our Supreme Court Justices do when
4 they're deciding a case. He was absolutely marvelous.

5 The same thing applied to Thurgood Marshall, because he
6 was sort of a loner as well. He often would be seen by
7 himself on social occasions. I would join him. He was a
8 funny man and liked to tell jokes. He had a lot of jokes, and
9 generally I did, too, so we'd exchange. I enjoyed him
10 tremendously

11 I had a great time with Byron White. We really became
12 close friends. I think my admiration for him was evident. We
13 were the same age—I think he was maybe a year older.

14 Q. I heard that you also had some interaction with
15 Justice O'Connor, previously?

16 A. Yes, I did. I told you about Lt. Buck and Lt.
17 Dwyer, and our service together in Germany. Lt. Buck told me
18 he had a close friend in an adjacent command who did not have
19 the opportunity to participate in courts-martial cases. He
20 wanted to get the experience. His commanding officer agreed.
21 I told Lt. Buck, "Well, bring him over here, and he can try
22 all the cases he desires." We tried them right and left in
23 the 4th Infantry Division. His name was John O'Connor. His
24 wife, Sandra Day, was with him. I didn't see a great deal of

1 her, but she was very lovely, very nice, quiet. You know how
2 accomplished she was. John and I became very good friends.
3 After we parted company, and I came home, I didn't see them
4 again until she was appointed to the Supreme Court.

5 Q. Yes, sir.

6 A. John and I made a point to have lunch together every
7 month just to talk things over. He eventually fell victim to
8 Alzheimer's disease. He suffered more than anyone else I
9 knew. I think he saw it coming because years ago I lost my
10 wife, and he wrote me a letter of condolence. Although he
11 didn't mention that his own health was failing, he told me
12 what to do with myself to handle the grief and gave me advice
13 that seemed to pertain to his problems. He told me to use my
14 mind as much as I could, read all I could, and, in general,
15 stay mentally active. Unfortunately, John passed away about
16 two years ago.

17 Q. Of all the justices, who would you say was your
18 favorite, if you could pick one?

19 A. Well, you know, they're all so outstanding. Let me
20 tick off a few. John Paul Stevens was a good friend. He had
21 a wonderful personality, and I used to use him a lot as an
22 instructor. I'll give you a little example of his
23 personality. I was conducting a course in Chicago, and I put
24 him on the faculty. Shortly after we began he came to me and

1 said, "Sir, I just learned that my mother is quite ill.
2 Would you release me; may I please go see her? Would you
3 excuse me from teaching today?" Now, he didn't have to talk
4 to me that way. All he had to do was say, "Hey, buddy, I'll
5 see you. I'm not going to be here."

6 Q. How do you respond to that?

7 A. Well, I said something to the effect of, "That's so
8 nice of you, Judge. Absolutely. Go right ahead. It'll be no
9 problem at all. We can cover it and we can take care of it."
10 He was such a genuine man. If I had to chose one though from
11 all of the justices, I think maybe I'd have to come back to
12 Byron White. I was always such a great admirer of his, and it
13 showed, I'm sure. I was almost his age, but I think my
14 admiration showed through where I was like a kid with the star
15 athlete, which he was.

16 Q. You mentioned throughout this interview that you
17 tried to get to know people, not just know who they were, but
18 actually know them. Of all the federal judges that you worked
19 with, who was your favorite?

20 A. Of all the district judges that would be Bill
21 Campbell of Chicago.

22 Q. Why is that, sir?

23 A. Bill is dead and gone now, so I guess I can tell
24 this story. He suffered a heart attack, and didn't want

1 anybody to know about it. He couldn't do anything that was
2 strenuous. He told Judge Murrah that he would like to
3 associate with me as the director of training. He wanted to
4 accompany me when I went out to do these seminars. He said,
5 "I'll do everything I can to help Ken." Judge Murrah told me,
6 "Now look, this is what Bill said, but it's up to you. I'm
7 not going to saddle you with him unless it's okay with you."
8 I said to myself, "Well, what's going to happen is that he's
9 going to be the head guy because he's a federal judge and I'm
10 not, but if I think I can win in this situation by saying no,
11 I've got another thing coming. There's only one way to go."
12 I said I would be delighted.

13 It turned out to be one of the best things that could
14 have ever happened. We worked as a team; he loved to be the
15 main guy, you know, so I had him introduce all the speakers,
16 keep time, and handle the problems that arose among the
17 assorted personalities. That allowed me to be doing what I
18 had to do logistically with the hotel people or whatever else
19 was necessary. He got a lot of the glory, but that didn't
20 mean anything to me. He was always saying nice things about
21 me. If you said anything bad about me to him, you had a fight
22 on your hands.

23 Q. How long did you stay in that position, sir?

1 A. Sixteen years altogether; I was there 15 years. I
2 started in 1971, and I retired from the job in 1986, but the
3 Director had me stay on another year as a consultant until
4 they found somebody. I continued to do the same work.

5 Q. What did you do after that, sir?

6 A. I practiced law in Washington. I was a member of
7 the DC bar. I'd never done it, so I thought I'd give it a
8 shot.

9 Q. How was that experience?

10 A. I didn't like it. I wound up working a great deal
11 as an attorney for the District of Columbia. I represented
12 abused children. I thought it'd be good experience and I'd be
13 doing something good for mankind. However, I found it
14 depressing, to see so many children that had been abused. I
15 didn't like it at all. I had some other cases. I represented
16 Joe Palumbo, my friend here, in a case he had in Washington.
17 I never developed a viable practice.

18 Q. After practicing, you traveled overseas again. Is
19 that correct?

20 A. Yes. The Asia Foundation sent me to several foreign
21 countries to lecture. A Judge from Israel, Moshe Nacht, spent
22 a month with me at the Federal Judicial Center. He had fought
23 for the British in World War II and became a major in the
24 British Army. He was the administrative judge on the Israel

1 Supreme Court. He came over to see how we did things. I took
2 him under my wing he went with me to all our seminars, out of
3 town, and in town. He was very impressed. Before he left, he
4 said, "Would you come over and lecture in Israel?" I said,
5 "Sure. You betcha." I worked out a suitable presentation
6 which he approved. I went to Israel three times, three
7 different years, and stayed 2 weeks at a time.

8 Q. These course were after 16 years with the Federal
9 Judicial Center, or during your time there?

10 A. All three visits to Israel were during the time I
11 was at the Federal Judicial Center, but I continued to teach
12 stress management after I left there. The Asia Foundation
13 sent me to various countries to teach that because it was in
14 such high demand.

15 Q. In looking through some of your photos, I noticed
16 you had opportunity to meet quite a few impressive
17 individuals. I'm just going to pull out a few pictures, and
18 you can tell me about them if you don't mind.

19 A. Go right ahead.

20 Q. Let's start with this one. It's one of my
21 favorites.

22 A. This was taken in Korea, and this is Bob Hope. You
23 probably recognize him, and Jill St. John. This young lady is
24 from London. She was selected as Miss Universe that year.

1 Jill was designated to be my date that night, and we paired
2 off. We had tables of four for dinner. Terrific
3 entertainment followed.

4 My wife was in the same large room. She was paired off
5 with one of the fellows that ran a camera. Here I'm with this
6 doll. She was lovely inside and out, just a total doll.

7 Madge was not happy with me.

8 Q. How about this individual? He seemed to be a pretty
9 decent lawyer on the big screen, if I recall.

10 A. Well, he wasn't the easiest guy to get along with in
11 the world. I couldn't kid with him or get relaxed around him.
12 In his favor, I took him to see some big wheels in the Korean
13 Government. We went to the law enforcement people because of
14 his Perry Mason persona he had a big interest in such things.

15 Q. Just to point it out, we are talking about who, sir?

16 A. Raymond Burr, aka Perry Mason. It was winter, dead
17 of winter, last of December. The policemen had no coats.
18 Burr said, "Why don't these police have coats?" I said, "I
19 don't know." I found the top judge, and I called him over and
20 introduced him. I said, "Mr. Burr would like to know why your
21 men aren't wearing coats. It's so cold." He said, "Well, we
22 can't afford to buy them, and they can't afford to buy them
23 themselves, so they just have to do without." Burr then said,
24 "What's it going to cost to get each one a coat?" The answer

1 came back, "Fifteen hundred bucks," which was quite a bargain,
2 because there were quite a few guys. Burr wrote out a check
3 for \$1500 on the spot and gave it to me and said, "Take care
4 of it." I gave it to the chief, and it was reported to me
5 later that the coats were delivered and all was well. I
6 reported this to Raymond Burr. I thought that was a pretty
7 nice thing of him to do.

8 Q. How about this photo?

9 A. That's Gerry Adams. He heads up the political arm
10 of the IRA in Ireland called Sinn Féin. I was over there on a
11 mission after I'd retired.

12 Q. Yes, sir.

13 A. The State Department was behind this, and they
14 selected a number of us from the Washington area, mainly
15 church people. We went over there. We talked to all of the
16 leaders: Ian Paisley, Gerry Adams—just about everybody that
17 you read about over there in the news. One of the interesting
18 things that happened was, if you were a Protestant, then you
19 were billeted in a monastery. We stayed with six priests. If
20 you were a Catholic guy, you went into a Protestant
21 establishment.

22 Q. How about this one, sir? He seems to be pretty
23 famous.

1 A. That's Benjamin Netanyahu from Israel. He is the
2 Prime Minister. I met him while in Israel and got well
3 acquainted with him. This is Ben and his wife. Her name is
4 Sara. I met Ben at Moshe Nacht's home. On this particular
5 occasion, Moshe Nacht and Mrs. Nacht had a small party at
6 their home. People were standing around in little groups. I
7 was very tired and went over to sit down in an easy chair. It
8 wasn't long before this young man, about 35 years old, came in
9 and sat down next to me. He said he'd wanted to meet me and
10 talk to me, and asked if this was a good occasion to visit
11 with him. He said he worked at the Israeli embassy, and Nacht
12 had told him how helpful I had been to him. He said he was
13 very sorry we had not gotten together in Washington. I told
14 him I regretted it also. As I recall, Ben was the number
15 three man at the Israeli embassy at the time.

16 Q. Yes, sir.

17 A. I asked him, "How do you speak such perfect
18 English?" He said, "I went to Cornell. My father was a
19 professor there. I'm a graduate of MIT." He was a very smart
20 cookie, no doubt. He was also a pretty tough guy. That came
21 from being a paratrooper and a commando. He had one older
22 brother, Jonathan, who was killed in the Entebbe Raid in
23 Uganda. Jonathan was a couple of years older than Ben.

1 Q. One of my favorite pictures, sir, is this one right
2 here. Can you tell me where this one is from?

3 A. Oh, sure. That's from Korea. You recognize Wally
4 Solf. This is the Status of Forces meeting. Wally was the
5 staff judge advocate of Eighth Army. I was the staff judge
6 advocate of the Korean Military Advisory Group. These are the
7 Korean members. Phil Habib was our chief. Habib was
8 brilliant. He became an advisor to President Nixon. At the
9 time this picture was made we were fussing with these Korean
10 guys about the revision of the Status of Forces Agreement.

11 Q. Yes, sir. It looks like a pretty tense moment, sir.

12 A. We argued over every word in the agreement.

13 Q. And the cigarettes were burning away.

14 A. All the time. It would get so tense back that we'd
15 adjourn, and go to a Geisha house, that was Philip Habib's
16 idea.

17 Q. Sir, I'd like to go back to your time in the JAG
18 Corps for a few more questions. You witnessed a lot of
19 changes taking place. If you were The Judge Advocate General
20 of the Army, what change would you push for? What would you
21 like to see implemented across the board for judge advocates?

22 A. I'm thinking of my experiences as the Director of
23 Education and Training of the Federal Judicial Center. I
24 would like to see an alliance of some sort with the judge

1 advocates and the federal judiciary. I'd like to bring the
2 two closer together. Our judge advocates could benefit so
3 much from what the federal judges are doing and what they're
4 learning. I would like to see some sort of working
5 arrangement between the two. It is a wonderful organization
6 and is quite advanced. Doesn't it stand to reason that what
7 they are doing would be a benefit if we had such an
8 arrangement?

9 Q. How would you recommend implementing something like
10 that?

11 A. John Cook followed me, and he is still at the
12 Federal Judicial Center. Talk to him. If I were The Judge
13 Advocate General I'd go to the Chief Justice of the United
14 States, first of all. I'd also get to know the Director of
15 the Administrative Office of the U.S. Courts. Then I'd go to
16 the Federal Judicial Center, and propose a working
17 relationship. Start by having a few judge advocates sit in on
18 some of the classes put on by the Center. You know, these
19 federal judges meet in all sections of the country, and
20 wouldn't it be nice to have judge advocates be able to sit in
21 with them, particularly military judges?

22 Q. Yes, sir.

1 Q. Let me ask you this, sir. From the time you came
2 into the JAG Corps in '48 until the time you retired in 1970,
3 what direction did you see the Corps as a whole heading in?

4 A. Improvement; becoming better judges, better system,
5 and becoming a better servant of the American people and the
6 American armed forces. I think that discipline is very good
7 in today's service, maybe better than it used to be, certainly
8 better than the years prior to World War II. Look what we've
9 done? Look how far we've come insofar as segregation is
10 concerned? Don't forget in World War II, blacks were rarely
11 allowed to fly airplanes except, you know, the Tuskegee
12 Airmen. This was just ridiculous. That's terrible.

13 Q. Yes, sir.

14 A. I think our country is on a tragic descent, and
15 something's got to be done to stop this. I'm talking about
16 our morals, attitudes, patriotism. Something's got to be
17 done, and the Judge Advocate General's Corps can contribute to
18 this.

19 Q. From your retirement in 1970 to your current
20 exposure to judge advocates in 2008, would you say we're still
21 improving?

22 A. Oh, yes. I think so. My observation since being
23 here just these 2 days and from what you folks have told me

1 and from what I've heard from others, yes, no question about
2 it.

3 Q. The emphasis right now of the TJAG is to get back to
4 our roots, our statutory mission of military justice. What do
5 you think about that?

6 A. Well, I don't know. I think I see a little
7 adversity in me to this, because military justice is not the
8 whole story. Let's think about how we can improve the Army.
9 To do so, we've got to work with the civilian world. That's
10 going to involve a lot of law and regulations. I think that
11 The Judge Advocate General's Corps may need a bigger role in
12 the national realm, maybe it should be a louder voice.

13 Q. Not to accuse you playing favorites, but did you
14 have any particular judge advocate that worked for you that
15 you just knew the whole time was a superstar?

16 A. Yes. Wayne Alley comes to mind very quickly. He
17 was on my staff here. He was one of the instructors, and I
18 recognized immediately that he was a super-bright fellow. He
19 would always use the right word. He would shade his words, a
20 different word of similar meaning. You knew exactly what he
21 meant. He was the best at that that I ever knew. Major
22 General Sutton was the Chief of the JAG Reserves while I was
23 at the JAG School. Wayne taught several courses. Claims was
24 one of his subjects. I had him make a video of some of the

1 things he taught, just two or three classes. We even had a
2 makeup person come in and touch him up so he'd look his best.
3 Then he did his spiel with the camera on him.

4 When I went to General Sutton with this, and I explained,
5 "General, this is an example of what we're teaching at the JAG
6 School." Wayne was the best teacher I had. General Sutton
7 said he'd like to see it. He watched it, and he was
8 impressed. He said, "Now, what do you want me to do?" I
9 said, "I don't have the money, but what I'd like to do is
10 reproduce these things in bulk, enough of them so we can
11 furnish all of the judge advocate units in the field with
12 needed instruction." General Sutton thought it was a great
13 idea. He told me to go ahead.

14 Q. What set Wayne apart?

15 A. His ability to express himself is one thing. Also,
16 when we'd have a problem, it would be "Wayne, what do you
17 think?" Well, Wayne could get right to the heart of it, right
18 to the crux. He could analyze problems very well. He got a
19 star. He retired as a brigadier general, and became the dean
20 of the law school of the University of Oklahoma. He became a
21 federal judge, now he is on senior status. He is quite a man.

22 Q. What would you say would be the perfect traits for a
23 model judge advocate?

24 A. Start with humility.

1 Q. More so than any other trait?

2 A. Yes. There are many needed traits. I always think
3 of this little line. "Come off of that humility stuff, buddy;
4 you ain't that great." You've heard that, I'm sure.

5 Q. Yes, sir. What other traits would you most value?

6 A. Kindness, consideration, hard worker, above average
7 intelligence, integrity. I believe humility is at the top of
8 the list. Where I find it I usually find the others. I like
9 people who avoid self-aggrandizement.

10 Q. Obviously, the academic prowess is somewhat
11 important; would you say, sir?

12 A. Absolutely. That's a given.

13 Q. You served during multiple times of conflict: World
14 War II, the Korean War, Vietnam. What do you think of the
15 current state of affairs that we as judge advocates are facing
16 in today's society?

17 A. "There will always be wars; there'll be rumors of
18 wars." What that means is this: You've always got to be
19 prepared. Don't ever let your guard down. Be ready to defend
20 this great nation. Do everything you can to help at all
21 times.

22 Q. What do you think is the biggest challenge for
23 today's judge advocates more so than when you served, sir?

1 A. If I were Commandant here now, I would ask every new
2 officer coming into this school, "What do you know about the
3 Muslim extremist situation?" They're the enemy at the present
4 times and they're going to be the enemy for the foreseeable
5 future.

6 Q. Now, when you say the "Muslim extremist," are you
7 referring to terrorism as a whole?

8 A. Yes, I really meant the terrorist situation. I
9 should have clarified that, because I think it is only a small
10 percentage of the Muslim people that are causing so much
11 trouble.

12 Q. One last substantive two-part question for you.
13 What issues do you think right now the JAG Corps needs to
14 address to be value-added player in the transformation of the
15 Army, and where do you feel we should focus our efforts to
16 remain successful as a Corps in the future?

17 A. I think that we've always got to be knowledgeable of
18 the world situation Individuals should keep themselves
19 informed of the political situation. They should know as much
20 as they can about who the players are and what they stand for.
21 I think what we really have to do is be an important part of
22 the team. We need to determine how best we can contribute to
23 finding the solution to our problems. We are better educated
24 than the norm. We should be better thinkers than the norm,

1 and we shouldn't confine ourselves to merely trying court-
2 martial cases. Let's lift our sights and see what the big
3 picture is and how we can contribute to the solutions so badly
4 needed.

5 Q. So you think we bring more to the table as big
6 picture advisors than just as courtroom advocates?

7 A. Yes, I do. I meet weekly with several other retired
8 officers, and we do this even though our voices are heard by
9 very few. We study, we discuss, we even vent our spleen
10 sometimes. We really worry about the issues we have today.

11 Q. So not be narrowly focused?

12 A. Exactly.

13 Q. If you met a brand new judge advocate lieutenant
14 here at the Basic Course today, and they asked you, "Sir, I
15 understand you had a very successful JAG Corps career. Tell
16 me what I need to do to follow suit." What advice would you
17 give them?

18 A. Number one, work hard. Be a good guy. Whatever you
19 do, go into it with the idea that you're going to master it.
20 Apply yourself as best you can. Whatever you do, give it your
21 best shot, your best effort and you will grow tremendously.
22 Don't stop growing. I'm 92 years old, and I'm still trying to
23 improve. I've got a long way to go, I admit.

1 Q. Do you think judge advocates in general, by title or
2 position alone, are leaders?

3 A. Yes, I do. I'm convinced they are.

4 Q. How do you develop these future leaders?

5 A. First of all, we hit on it sometime ago. True
6 leadership, basically to me, is what you can do for others.
7 You know, in the old Army, the word was you see that your men
8 are bedded down, fed, taken care of, and then you see about
9 yourself. Expand to others outside the Army. In this life,
10 you're going to find many individuals that are under stress.
11 Often, with a few words of encouragement you can be a big help
12 to a lot of people. I've always liked this phrase: "Don't
13 sweat the small stuff, and it's all small stuff." I know
14 that's easier said than done, but you can take a problem, and
15 often analyze it to where you realize it's all small stuff.
16 Help others see that.

17 Q. Would you say positive reinforcement is more
18 valuable than stern discipline?

19 A. I have found it so. I'm not a big believer in stern
20 discipline. I think every human being is flawed. Saint Paul
21 told us that none of us were perfect. He said he was the
22 worst of all. I don't think he was, but anyway, he said he
23 was. I never believed in what you call stern discipline as
24 the best answer. Situations differ, and so do solutions.

1 Q. Yes, sir.

2 A. I think every situation has got to be handled by
3 itself. Of course, I want to be sensible about this. If one
4 won't respond to your best efforts, turn up the dial, increase
5 the "tough love" dial.

6 I played a little role in a Teddy Kennedy episode. Bob
7 Kennedy told me that Ted wanted to take a year off from
8 college. He wanted to enlist and serve a year in Europe. I
9 told him I could help and was glad to do so. Could I help
10 him? I called a close friend in Washington named Jim Sutton.
11 He was in the personnel end of things. I told him that Bob
12 had told me that Teddy wanted to take a year off, etc. He
13 wanted to be an MP in Germany. I asked if he could arrange
14 that. He said, "Sure, no problem." He did. About 2 weeks
15 later he called me and said, "What have you done to me? I'm
16 in big trouble. I'm being investigated. This guy cheated on
17 an exam. I've already put all this in the mill. I'm just
18 afraid that I'm in serious trouble now." I said, "Well,
19 you're not. What you do is tell the investigators exactly
20 what I said. Your friend, Ken Crawford, asked you to do this.
21 He's a major down at the University of Virginia. Have them
22 call me if they like and I'll verify that. You tell them I'm
23 going to take everything they say to Bob Kennedy, and he will

1 know every word." That's exactly what he did, and that was
2 the end of it. Nobody asked anymore questions.

3 I tell you the foregoing to get to an important point.
4 Something I'll never forget. Joe Kennedy, Mr. Kennedy, was
5 really angry about the whole thing. He was Ted's father.

6 Q. Yes, sir.

7 A. One of the things he said to Teddy was, "What did
8 you stand to gain from cheating on the exam, having somebody
9 go in and take it for you? What did you have to gain by that
10 if you had gotten by with it? Practically nothing! Look at
11 the consequences now of what a gamble like that has cost you.
12 You're in trouble with the whole country." I think that is a
13 very, very important point, one that I like to emphasize.

14 Q. To weigh the consequences of your actions?

15 A. Yes, indeed. There are consequences to everything
16 you do, good and bad. Always consider the consequences of
17 everything you do.

18 Q. I think that is great advice for a brand new judge
19 advocate.

20 A. I do, too. If you want to be a wise guy, you better
21 think about it.

22 Q. Now that you had this experience to be interviewed
23 for your oral history, is there anyone else that you think

1 would be valuable to the JAG Corps to document with an oral
2 history?

3 A. I do, but let me hold it at one. At the head of the
4 list, I'd put Wayne Alley, because as I mentioned earlier, he
5 retired as a one-star from the JAG Corps, he became a federal
6 district judge, and in between, he was the dean of the law
7 school at the University of Oklahoma. He was a tremendously
8 successful guy and he was just that good. He's got everything
9 it takes. An outstanding fellow as you can tell. He's also
10 quite a speaker.

11 Q. Thank you for that recommendation. Is there
12 anything else that you'd like to add to your oral history,
13 sir?

14 A. No, sir. I don't believe so. I've enjoyed it.

15 Q. Sir, on behalf of Major Pickands and myself and the
16 entire JAG Corps community, it has been a pleasure and honor
17 to speak with you over the past three days, to get to know
18 you, and to record and document your oral history. I just
19 want to thank you again for your career and for your service
20 to your country.

21 A. That's very nice, Rob. Thank you so much. It's
22 been a great pleasure for me. I was delighted to be asked,
23 and I feel very honored to be making this small contribution.

1 I wish we had more time. There is so much more that I'd like
2 to say...

3 [END OF INTERVIEW]

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

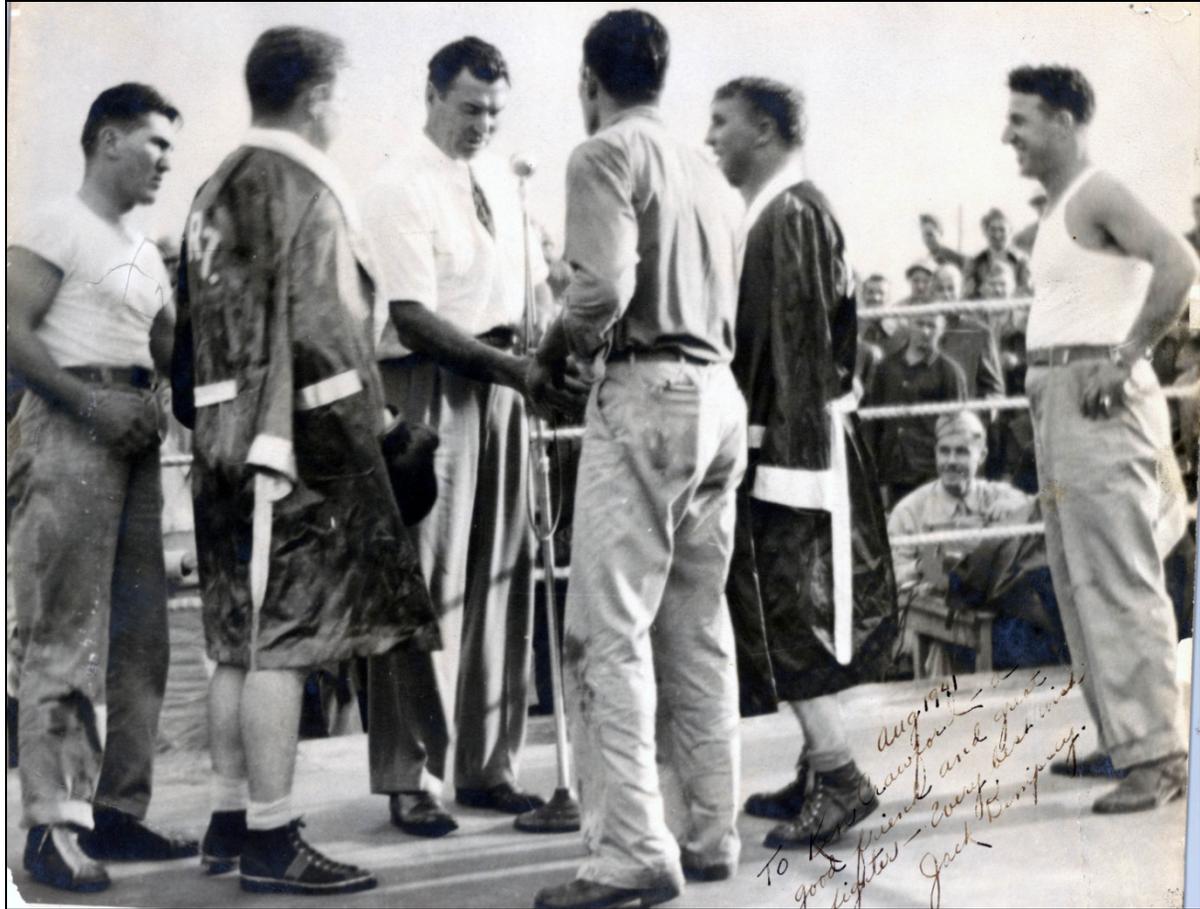
18

19

20



Ken Crawford in first grade (1924) in Kincaid, Illinois



Ken Crawford with opponent Joel Leffingwell and boxing legend Jack Dempsey

The inscription reads: "To Ken Crawford – a good friend and great fighter –
Every Best Wish, Jack Dempsey."



Major Crawford and Lieutenant Bob Faye in Belgium

24 August 1945
Date Issued

Headquarters XXIX Tactical Air Command
MUNICH GERMANY
CITATION FOR
The Belgian Fourragere 1940



MAJOR KENNETH C CRAWFORD 0453971 FA

UNITED STATES ARMY, for meritorious service in Belgium from 1 October 1944 to 15 January 1945 inclusive.

1. His Royal Highness and Prince-Regent of Belgium has twice cited the XXIX Tactical Air Command in Orders of the Day of the Belgian Army-Decision No. 717, dated 7 July 1945, for meritorious service in Belgium from 1 October 1944 to 15 January 1945 inclusive, in connection with military operations against the enemy.
2. The unceasing and heroic efforts of the Officers and Enlisted personnel of the units of the XXIX Tactical Air Command permitted this headquarters to organize and prescribe the missions so effectively carried out against the enemy. Yours was a decisive and glorious part in the defeat of the enemy during the Battle of the Ardennes and you have helped in measurably in the liberation of Belgium.
3. For these two citations, His Royal Highness the Prince-Regent of Belgium has awarded you The Belgium Fourragere (1940). This certificate authorizes you the right to wear this Fourragere as a visible token of your military virtue and the gratitude of the peoples of Belgium. The War Department has approved the awarding of The Belgian Fourragere (1940) with citation per War Department Cable (AG-WAR-WX 32845 dated 15 July 1945).
4. It is to be noted that having been an original member of your organization during the period 1 October 1944 to 15 January 1945 inclusive, you are authorized by the War Department to wear the Fourragere over the right shoulder when in proper uniform in any branch or echelon of the United States Army, Navy, or Marine Corps establishments.

James C. McGehee
JAMES C. McGEHEE, Colonel, AC,
~~Unit Commander~~
Chief of Staff
Hq XXIX Tactical Air Command
Organization

(This citation not valid unless
signed and sealed by Unit Commander.)

R. E. Nugent
R. E. NUGENT
Brigadier General, U. S. Army
Commanding

Major Crawford's Belgian Fourragere, awarded 24 August 1945
by Brigadier General R. E. Nugent



General William C. Westmoreland with Major General Kenneth J. Hodson
and Colonel Crawford



Major General Paul Freeman awarding the Soldier's Medal to Lieutenant Colonel Crawford at Fort Benning, Georgia

The inscription reads: "To Ken Crawford, Congratulations, and best wishes. Paul Freeman, Major General."



Colonel Crawford with Raymond Burr (Perry Mason) in Korea



Colonel Crawford (left) greeting "Miss World," with Jill St. John (middle) and Bob Hope (second from left) looking on



*For Kenneth C. Crawford
with best wishes Warren E. Burger*

Colonel Crawford with Chief Justice Warren E. Burger

The inscription reads: "For Kenneth C. Crawford with best wishes, Warren E. Burger."



To Ken
AND MADGE
WITH ALL GOOD
WISHES.

Arleigh Burke
Adm U.S.N. (Ret)
10/26/91
ARLEIGH
BURKE
&
MRS
BURKE

Colonel and Mrs. Crawford with Admiral and Mrs. Arleigh Burke

The inscription reads: "To Ken and Madge with all good wishes, Adm U.S.N. (ret)
Arleigh Burke & Mrs. Burke



Colonel Crawford with Justice William J. Brennan, Jr.



Colonel Crawford with Bill Webster (former Director of the FBI and CIA), Madge Crawford, and Griffin Bell (former Attorney General)



Colonel Crawford with Chief Justice William H. Rehnquist



Colonel Crawford with Benjamin Netanyahu and his wife Sarah Netanyahu



Colonel Crawford with Gerry Adams, President of Sinn Féin

ACCESS AGREEMENT

(JUDGE ADVOCATE ORAL HISTORY PROGRAM)

As a participant in the Judge Advocate Oral History Program, I understand that any audio and video tapes and transcripts of the interview or interviews in which I participated will become part of the collection of the library of The Judge Advocate General's School and that it may become part of the permanent collections of other academic institutions or institutes of military history within the Department of Defense. I surrender any copyright or other interest in the oral history to the United States Government. Recognizing that the interview contains thoughts of a highly personal nature, I authorize access to those parts of the oral history in which I participated to the following degree: (indicate by checking the selected response):

 X

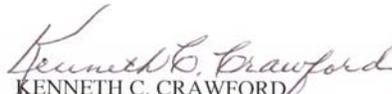
no restrictions

access to active and retired members of the Armed Forces and government employees engaged in official research for an agency of the United States Government.

anyone engaged in scholarly research as determined by the Commandant of The Judge Advocate General's School.

only those persons not assigned to or employed at The Judge Advocate General's School to whom I give my written consent.

I understand that The Judge Advocate General's School will not voluntarily release or provide access to the oral history in which I participated except as permitted above. I release The Judge Advocate General's School and the United State Government from any liability in connection with the involuntary release of any part of this oral history.


KENNETH C. CRAWFORD
COL, JA Retired

 1/26/09
DATE

ORAL HISTORY PROGRAM
COLONEL KENNETH C. CRAWFORD, U.S. ARMY (RETIRED)

Biographical Sketch of Interviewers

Major Robert J. Abbott:

Judge Advocate, United States Army. Presently assigned as Student, 57th Judge Advocate Officer Graduate Course, The Judge Advocate General's School, United States Army, Charlottesville, Virginia. J.D. 2004, University of Missouri at Kansas City; M.A. 2000, Chapman University at McChord Air Force Base; B.S. 1998, Indiana University-Purdue University at Indianapolis. Previous assignments include Trial Counsel, 1st Brigade Combat Team, 101st Airborne Division (Air Assault), 2006-2008; Chief, Client Services, TF Band of Brothers, 101st Airborne Division (Air Assault), COB Speicher, Tikrit, Iraq, 2005-2006; Operational Law Attorney, 101st Airborne Division (Air Assault), Fort Campbell Kentucky, 2004-2005; Commander, Headquarters and Headquarters Detachment, 1st Personnel Group, Fort Lewis, Washington, 2000-2001. Member of the bars of the state of Missouri, the Court of Appeals for the Armed Forces, and the United States Supreme Court..

Major Alexander N. Pickands:

Judge Advocate, United States Army. Presently assigned as Student, 57th Judge Advocate Officer Graduate Course, The Judge Advocate General's School, United States Army, Charlottesville, Virginia. J.D., 2004, College of William and Mary Law School, Williamsburg, Virginia; B.A., 1996, The St. John's College, Annapolis, Maryland. Previous assignments include Chief of Military Justice, 101st Airborne Division (Air Assault) and Fort Campbell, Kentucky, 2007-2008; Trial Counsel, 2d Brigade Combat Team and 502d Infantry Regiment, FOB Striker, Baghdad, Iraq, 2006-2007; Chief, Legal Assistance Office and Administrative Law Attorney, 101st Airborne Division (Air Assault), 2004-2006; prior commissioned service with the 2d Armored Cavalry Regiment, Fort Polk, Louisiana and 11th Armored Cavalry Regiment (OPFOR), Fort Irwin, California, 1996-2001; Enlisted service , 1993-1996. Member of the bars of the Commonwealth of Virginia, the Court of Appeals for the Armed Forces, and the United States Supreme Court.

INDEX

1

103rd Infantry Division..... 129, 131

4

4th Infantry Division..... 210

8

85th Infantry Division..... 129, 131
8th Infantry Division..... 151, 155

A

Adams, Don 86
Adams, Everett..... 86, 88
Adams, Gerry 270, 15
Administrative Office of the U.S. Courts
..... 255
Africa 84
Air Force Group Command 143
Alexander, "Rough" 121, 122
Alley, BG Wayne..... 277, 278, 279, 286
American Federation of Labor..... 84
American Legion 43, 83
American University Law School..... 255
Arkansas..... 103
 Caruthersville..... 103
Army War College..... 217
Arn, COL Loren..... 195, 196
Asia Foundation 260, 267, 268
Atlas, Charles 86

B

Baer, Max..... 72
Bank Robbery 33
Barrow, Bonnie and Clyde..... 35
Baseball... 2, 21, 22, 36, 43, 45, 46, 69, 70,
72, 73, 78, 81, 84, 89, 90, 91, 92, 94, 95,
96, 103, 124, 163, 167, 169
Cincinnati Reds..... 102, 103

Philadelphia Athletics 145
Senators, The..... 101
St. Louis Browns..... 2
St. Louis Cardinals 2, 22, 36, 89, 94, 97,
99, 100, 102
World Series..... 100, 101
Baughman, Mr. 94
Belgium..... 144, 152, 155, 159, A-3, A-4
 Ardens 155
 Herken Forest..... 151, 153, 155
Bell, Bob 106
Bell, Griffin..... 219, 220, 221, A-12
Berger, Charlie 35
Bible, The..... 15, 96, 229, 279, 280
Black, Justice Hugo L. 219
Borden Milk Company 199
Borden, Ellen 199, 200
Bottomley, James "Sunny Jim" ... 2, 22, 36,
72, 102
Boxing... 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64,
65, 67, 68, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 76, 77, 78,
81, 109, 111, 114, 124, 129, 143, 163
 Golden Gloves 58, 59
Bradley, GEN Omar N..... 136
Breeze Courier Newspaper Company... 46,
52, 62
Brennan, Justice William J. Jr.185, 186, 11
Broverman Gym.....*See* Broverman, Saul
Broverman, Saul 55
Brown, Earl 181, 193
Bryan, William Jennings..... 115
Bullies 25, 230
 Blutheart, Ed 110, 113
 Doughtery, Colm Kelly..... 59, 60, 61
 Maxwell, Alec..... 25, 26, 27, 30
 Pasquale, Tulio..... 44
 Pilate, Leonardo 31
Burger, Chief Justice Warren E. A-9
Burke, ADM Arleigh A-10
Burr, Raymond..... 269, 270, A-7

C

Caine, Merle..... 123

California	87, 88
Hollywood.....	64, 88
Needles.....	87
Campbell, Judge Bill.....	83, 105, 117, 118, 264
Capone, Al	35
Cecil, Andrew	253
China.....	158
Church, The... ..	16, 59, 60, 82, 97, 118, 119, 265, 270
Citadel, The.....	200, 252
City Services Oil Company	7
Clark, Tom	259
Coleman, Demaris.....	38, 39
Conn, Billy.....	69
Cosgrove, Mr.	106, 107, 115, 116, 117
Cosgrove's Restaurant	106, 123
Cuba	97
Cutter, Slade.....	81

D

Dappert, Boyd.....	43
Davidson, Kottie	183, 184, 185
Davis, GEN Benjamin O. Jr.....	238
D-Day.....	149, 155
Dean, Jerome Hanna "Dizzy"	72, 101
Dean, Paul.....	101
Decatur Country Club.....	63
Decker, MG Charles L.....	170, 192, 205, 206, 225
Dempsey, Jack	72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 124, 125, 180, A-2
Depression, The Great ..	23, 24, 35, 37, 50, 53, 68, 84, 208, 240
Diekemper, Ralph	168, 173
Dietrich, Marlene	159
Dillard, Dean Hardy Cross... ..	223, 224, 230
Dillinger, John.....	35
Draft, The.....	84, 123, 151
Dudley, Bill.....	191
Durand, Bob.....	213
Durocher, Leo	98, 99, 100
Dwyer, Bill.. ..	210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216
Dykes, Jimmy	145

E

Eckert, Al	91
Edelman, GEN Clyde D.....	212, 213
Edmond, "Red"	64
Effie, Miss.....	53
Egypt.....	260
Eisenhower, GEN Dwight D. "Ike"	136, 184
England	140
Bristol.....	142, 143
Cambridge.....	143
Erkart, Collins.....	193
Ethiopia.....	84

F

Fagg, COL Fayette.....	144
Family	
Aunt (Gates, Bess)	6
Brother (Jimmy) 3, 4, 7, 8, 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 18, 21, 23, 32, 33, 42, 43, 51, 53, 66, 92, 110, 141, 146, 153, 154, 240	
Cousin (Fleming, Jim)	119
Cousin (Gates, Billy)	6
Cousin (Gates, Ellen).....	6
Cousin (Gates, Newell).....	6
Cousin (Islard, Ralph).....	7, 8, 9, 189
Father 2, 3, 4, 15, 21, 22, 39, 42, 45, 46, 50, 55, 60, 81, 84, 90, 94, 140, 143, 272	
Grandfather (Gates, Tony).....	4, 5, 6, 10
Grandmother (Gates, Emma).....	4, 5, 12
Mother. 3, 4, 6, 9, 12, 13, 18, 24, 30, 32, 33, 37, 39, 42, 43, 47, 50, 51, 55, 60, 90, 92, 94, 99, 105, 110, 140, 141, 143, 151, 155, 157, 178, 208, 263	
Aunt (Cora)	6, 89
Aunt (Gladys).....	6, 60
Aunt (Lula).....	6
Aunt (Ruby)	6, 7
Sister (Joanne).....	4, 15, 21, 42, 92
Sister (Ruth).....	4, 13, 15, 18, 42, 79, 92
Son (Jim) . 173, 179, 200, 247, 248, 256, 277	
Uncle (Gates, William "Willie").....	6

Uncle (Heckermeyer, Ira "Uncle Heck") 60
 Uncle (Islard, Lewis) 7
 Uncle (Letter, Bill)..... 89
 Wife (Madge).... 83, 139, 140, 157, 161, 163, 172, 173, 184, 190, 217, 220, 256, 271
 Farm 4, 5, 7, 10, 11, 37, 106
 Farmer, Fannie 225
 Faye, Bob 115, 150, 152, 153, 154, 155, 157, A-3
 Faye, William Louis II..... 154
 Fears, Wilma 25, 26, 27, 28
 Federal Judicial Center 187, 202, 219, 255, 259, 267, 268, 274
 Feller, Bob..... 2
 Field Artillery..... 129, 151, 206
 Field, Margaret..... 142
 Fisher, Laurabelle 82
 Football ... 7, 44, 69, 70, 81, 109, 110, 175, 183, 190, 191
 Detroit Lions 7
 Fort Meade 210
 France..... 44, 155, 158
 Deauville 158
 Normandy 154
 Paris..... 210, 212
 Francisco, Bill 180
 Franklin College..... 7
 Freeman, MG Paul 6
 Frenzel, LTC Bill 128, 131
 Frisch, Frankie 97, 98, 100

G

Gallagher, Norman and Lucille..... 38, 39
 Gashouse Gang *See* St. Louis Cardinals
 Gehrig, Lou 104
 Georgia..... 218, 221
 Atlanta..... 218, 221, 223
 Fort Benning 234, A-6
 Fort McPherson..... 218, 223
 Germany 25, 159, 172, 210, 214, 217, 247, 261, 284
 Gibbons, Floyd..... 51
 Gill, Richard T. 77
 Glasgow, Jack 80, 81, 82

Glasgow, John..... 80
 Gonzales, Mike 97, 101
 Gunnison, Bob 118
 Gutteridge, Donnie..... 99

H

Habib, Phillip 273
 Harris, GEN Hugh P. 200, 201
 Harvard 77, 171, 177, 187
 Hawaii 133
 Hillner, Ernst..... 122
 Hitler, Adolf..... 52, 83, 254
 Hodges, Carl 64
 Hodges, GEN Courtney 136
 Hodson, MG Kenneth J..... A-5
 Hometown..... *See* Taylorville, Illinois
 Hope, Bob 268, A-8
 Howe, GEN James 72

I

Illinois . 2, 4, 11, 17, 23, 24, 34, 39, 45, 54, 81, 87, 101, 102, 103, 106, 112, 140, 157, 160, 173, 174, 252
 Anna 160
 Chatham 62
 Chicago 78, 248, 249, 263, 264
 Clinton..... 45
 Coffeen..... 4, 7
 Edinburg..... 4, 13, 18, 20
 Hillsboro 4
 Jacksonville..... 91, 105, 119, 123, 138
 Kincaid 21, 31, 33, 34, 36, 38, 39, 43, 44, A-1
 Lincoln 79, 106
 Nokomis 2, 4
 Oswego 81
 Quincy 87
 Springfield.... 17, 72, 81, 91, 94, 95, 112
 Taylorville 17, 18, 43, 50, 52, 55, 62, 63, 64, 68, 78, 79, 89, 91, 101, 110, 155, 157
 Illinois College..... 91, 102, 103, 104, 105, 108, 115, 118, 138, 155, 161, 171, 190
 Indiana..... 7, 138, 241
 Fort Benjamin Harrison 241

Ingles, Dave	185
Ingles, Jayne.....	183, 184, 185
Iran	84
Ireland	30
Israel.....	267, 271
Italy	30, 84
IX Corps.....	167

J

Japan 76, 77, 133, 158, 159, 164, 165, 166, 167, 170, 172, 173, 234	
Matsumoto	169
Jennings, LTC Al.....	134, 136
Jewell, Don Jr.....	47
Jewell, Donald Sr.....	47
Jewell, Rex	47
John Marshall Law School.....	248, 250
Johnson, Ed.....	172
Jones, "Gorilla"	63
Judge Advocate General, The.....	122, 129, 192, 205, 207, 225, 231, 237, 260, 273, 274, 276, 281, 282
Judge Advocate General's Corps, The	129, 192, 205, 206, 207, 231, 233, 236, 248, 273, 275, 276, 277, 281, 282, 286
Judge Advocate General's Legal Center and School, The	195, 205, 223, 224, 230, 231, 233, 236, 246, 259, 260, 278

K

Kansas	217
Fort Leavenworth.....	217
Keeper of the Morals of Christian County and Two Adjacent Townships <i>See</i> Effie, Miss	
Kennedy, Robert F. "Bobby"	174, 175, 177, 181, 182, 189, 285
Kilpatrick, LTC Frank Smith.....	127, 164
Kirks, Roland	255
KMAG	<i>See</i> Korean Military Advisory Group
Korea... 179, 207, 217, 238, 247, 252, 253, 268, 269, 273, 280	
Korean Military Advisory Group.	217, 273
Korean War	179, 207, 280

Kuhn, Bowie K.	189
---------------------	-----

L

Laconia, The	52
Lamb, Alf.....	110
Larsen, Elmer.....	24, 25
Larsen, Hartley.....	24, 25
Leadership. 16, 20, 36, 136, 228, 229, 231, 283	
Leffingwell, Joel	74, 76, 124, A-2
Lemanski, Frank	78, 79, 104
Leon & Eddie's Club.....	179
Levin, Professor Leo	259
Lewis, John L.....	45, 47, 48, 84
LLM Progam.....	229
Lombardo, Guy and the Royal Canadians	51
Lorenz, Lawrence "Larrupin' Lawry" .	109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114
Losenny, Carl.....	168
Louis, Joe	69, 74
Louisiana.....	132, 133, 134, 136, 137, 140, 257, 258
Baton Rouge.....	204, 257
Fort Polk.....	134
Louisiana Maneuver Area	132, 133, 134, 137
Love, Bob.....	252, 253, 254

M

Mack, Connie.....	145
Magers, Janet	227
Magers, Scott	227
Majestic, The.....	52
Manassa Mauler	<i>See</i> Dempsey, Jack
Manson, Pete.....	181, 193
Mantle, Mickey	2
Marshall, GEN George	134, 135, 136
Marshall, Justice Thurgood.....	261
Martelli, Angel.....	116
Martelli, Carmen.....	116, 117
Martelli, Maria	116
Martin, Pepper.....	99
Maryland.....	80
Annapolis	80, 82

Fort Meade 178, 192, 195, 196, 255
Mason, Representative Harry H..... 81, 82
May, Harry 82
McDowell, Reverend Robert N. 82
McMahan, Mickey 2, 55, 56, 57, 58, 63,
64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 88
McMurray College 103, 137, 138, 139, 140
Mead, MG Armistead D. 137, 143, 144,
147, 148
Medwick, Joe "Ducky" 100, 101, 104
Michigan 205
Middle East 84
Miller, Arthur 187, 188
Mine, Coal 3, 15, 17, 18, 23, 31, 37, 45, 55,
59, 80, 120, 140, 151, 228
Mississippi 140
Hattiesburg 140
Missouri 63, 72, 91, 94, 99
St. Louis 2, 22, 63, 89, 97, 161, 234
Mize, Johnny 99
Molen, Leonard 64
Molen, Louise 93
Moore, LTG Harold G. "Hal" 217
Moore, Terry 100
Murrah, Judge Alfred P. 203, 259, 264

N

Nash, Professor 181, 182, 191
Natch, Moshe 267, 271
National University Law School 255
Nelson, Marge 138
Netanyahu, Benjamin 271, 272, A-14
Netherlands, The 172
Eindhoven 172
New Deal, The 84
New Guinea 4
New York 54, 78, 80, 98, 179, 180
New York Stock Exchange 54
Ninth United States Army... 137, 152, 153,
155
North Carolina 168
Charlotte 168
Fort Bragg 73, 124, 129, 130
Norway 25
Nugent, BG R.E. Nugent A-4

O

O'Connor, Justice Sandra Day 261, 262
Officer Candidate School (OCS) .. 76, 125,
126, 128
Ogrodowski, Bruce "Buisey" 99
Ohio 241
Cincinnati 241
Indian Hill 241
Oklahoma
Fort Sill 125, 128, 130, 131
Oliver, Howard and Betty 87, 88
Owen, Mickey 72, 98, 99, 100

P

Padgett, Don 100
Paige, Leroy "Satchel" 14, 15
Palumbo, Joe 175, 191, 266
Patton, GEN George S. "Old Blood and
Guts" 136
Pauls, Rolf 172
Peabody Coal Company. 23, 45, 79, 84, 88
Pennsylvania 54
Petty, Eddie 38, 39, 40, 41, 179
Petty, Hugh 38, 39
Philippines 158, 164
Camp Camarillo 164
Manila 164
Potts, Roscoe 20, 36, 37, 38, 40, 41
President, The 54, 184, 196, 218, 222
Clinton, Bill 54
Coolidge, John Calvin Jr. 195, 196
Johnson, Lyndon B. 222
Kennedy, John F. "Jack" 189, 190
Nixon, Richard M. 273
Roosevelt, Franklin Delano 54, 84
Progressive Mine Workers of America.. 45
Prohibition 35
Prugh, MG George S. 192, 217, 246

Q

Queen Elizabeth, The 141, 143

R

Radio Program, "Amos and Andy". 48, 52, 58, 85
 Correll, Charlie 48
 Gosden, Freeman 48
 Radio, "Atwater Kent" 51
 Rankin, Jim 62, 63
 Raycus, Al..... 226, 233
 Regular Army..... 162, 163
 Rehnquist, Chief Justice William H.... 260, 261, A-13
 Rickey, Wesley Branch..... 91, 95, 97, 101, 106
 Riggs, Frank..... 209
 Ritz, The..... 52, 53
 Roberts, Bill 64
 Roosevelt, BG Theodore Jr..... 150
 Rossiter, Rick..... 103
 Rubin, Alvin..... 204
 Ruth, Babe..... 104

S

Sanders, Gail 93
 Sanders, Jackie 64
 Second United States Army 196, 197
 Senate Judiciary Committee 215, 216
 Sergeant, Elwood 192, 193, 195
 Sessions, Gerald..... 93
 Shelton Gang.....35, *See* Bank Robbery
 Siemens, Vita 93
 Sigma Pi Society 115
 Sills, Beverly 78
 Simpson, GEN William H. . 136, 147, 152, 155, 159
 Snipers..... 145, 146
 Solf, COL Waldemar A. "Walter" 273
 Southern Illinois University 160
 Southern Methodist University Law School 253
 Southwestern Legal Foundation 253
 Spies, Emerson..... 186
 St. John, Jill..... 268, A-8
 St. Louis University Law School..... 63
 Staff and Command Course 134

Stevens, Justice John Paul..... 263
 Stillson, Charles 87
 Stork Club, The..... 179, 180
 Sullivan, John L. 111
 Supreme Court 218, 221, 260, 262, 267, 271
 Sutton, MG William..... 277

T

Tactical Air Command..... 143, 146
 Taft, Senator Robert A. 184
 Texas 51, 53, 137
 Dallas 202, 252, 253, 255
 Fort Sam Houston 140
 San Antonio 31, 51, 137, 180, 271
 Third United States Army 155, 218
 Thomas, Lowell 52, 58
 Thurmond, Senator James Strom. 215, 216
 Tipple 84, 85, 228
 Trimley, Jerry..... 175
 Trinity University..... 271
 Truman, MG Louis W..... 218, 223

U

UMWA *See* United Mine Workers of America
 Uneda Groceries*See* Uneda, Nick
 Uneda, Nick 30, 31, 33
 United Mine Workers of America ... 45, 84
 United States Military Academy... 80, 128, 137, 195, 223, 238
 United States Naval Academy ... 80, 81, 82
 University of Michigan 195, 205
 University of Oklahoma Law School . 279, 286
 University of Virginia. 171, 172, 173, 174, 180, 186, 187, 191, 205, 207, 229, 230, 255, 285
 UVA..... *See* University of Virginia

V

Vietnam..... 230, 280
 Virginia ... 1, 122, 174, 178, 185, 189, 190, 207, 259

Alexandria..... 45
Charlottesville..... 1, 122, 171, 181, 185,
223, 225, 227

W

Wabash Railroad Company 50
Walker, GEN Sam S. 217
Warner, Senator John W. 189
Washington . 45, 48, 77, 93, 161, 163, 186,
215, 219, 246, 281, 284
 Fort Lewis 163
 Seattle..... 211
Washington University 234
Washington University Law School ... 161,
170
Washington, D.C... 45, 204, 207, 222, 238,
256, 266, 270

Kennedy Center 78
Webster, Bill 161, A-12
West Point..... *See* United States Military
Academy
Westmoreland, GEN William C. A-5
White House, The 54
White, Justice Byron..... 261, 263
Williams, BG Bob..... 180, 207
Wisconsin..... 114
World War I..... 44, 52, 83, 84, 132, 182
 Belleau Wood..... 52
World War II134, 154, 179, 191, 207, 239,
267, 275, 280

Y

Young, COL Edward Hamilton "Hamm"
.. 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 210